

[The Big Change](#)

Published by Eugene E. Hartley at Smashwords

Copyright 2014, 2015 Eugene E. Hartley

This free ebook is licensed for your personal enjoyment. It may not be sold to other people. But you are welcome to give it away to as many people as you like.

It's not necessary but if you really enjoyed the story and would like to contribute something, I left my mailing address at the end.

Disclaimer

To add more realism to this story, I name and comment about actual people, actual companies, actual places, and actual things. Please remember the contents of this book are only my thoughts and opinions rolled up into a fun story. The news media always uses the word "alleged" to cover themselves, like the alleged offender, allegedly shot the policeman while the officer allegedly was arresting him. So when this fictional story asserts something as true, please first insert into your mind the word or the appropriate derivative of the word "allege". All hyperlinked internet pages, photos, and videos presented are not part of this book. I'm just recommending them for those who may be interested. And, you may want to use these videos for discussion purposes with your friends. Thanks.

[The style of this book](#)

Except for some wild science fiction, flattering of some famous people, and a little mysticism, this story is laid out as a fast moving plausible real life scenario of how great life would be after the Big Change. I also wrote it to appeal to younger people.

As mentioned above in the disclaimer, the book occasionally hyperlinks to webpages and videos like this one: [\(click\)](#). The story is excellent even without the hyperlinks. I just threw them in as an extra fun experience. I'm probably one of the few people who have done this with an ebook. The vids may not play on older tablets. And even new tablets can't multitask. By that I mean in a few places I'll ask you to play a song while reading the text, but you can't on a tablet. But you can on a regular computer with WIFI. You can do a free download of [Calibre](#) or [Adobe Digital Editions](#) to enable you to read an .epub or .mobi, etc. file on your computer. Having some good speakers attached will also enhance your experience. So, you can enjoy this story on a tablet, a smart phone, or on a regular computer.

If you'd like this ebook with a complete table of contents on the side, send me a request at bigchange4freedom@gmail.com. I was having difficulty moving the complete file over to Smashwords. Their version only has the top and middle in the outside table of contents.

The Big Change

Table of Contents

[The Big Change Copyright, Disclaimer, and Style](#)

[The B&B](#)

[Miniature golf, go-carting, cookout](#)

[A scary story](#)

[First visit to the museum](#)

[The betterments building](#)

[Lunch at the museum](#)

[Unusual additions to the group](#)

[Lupe is discovered](#)

[The amusement park](#)

[Trouble](#)

[Pause and take a break](#)

[Digression](#)

[Back at the B&B](#)

[Late night casino fun](#)

[Memorial service and benediction](#)

[The young pioneers](#)

[Back at the bed & breakfast](#)

[Off to the museum again](#)

[The symposium](#)

[Together for lunch](#)

[The proposal](#)

[Day four at the B&B](#)

[The Pioneer exhibits](#)

[Back to the amusement park](#)

[Norma and Larry go on a date](#)

[The next day](#)

[Norma's speech](#)

[The attempt on their lives](#)

[Time to relax and tie up some loose ends](#)

[Tony and K'akana](#)

[The horses](#)

[The double eagle](#)

[The power of mothers](#)

[The End for now](#)

[Postscript](#)

[Appendix - the Amendment](#)

The Big Change

The B&B

Jack's alarm went off at 6am. It's July 1, 2017. It's been well over two years since the Big Change but he's still not used to getting up so early. Most of his adult life he's spent late nights providing entertainment for Congressmen, the President, and everybody's high level staff members. Jack used to put on some great parties. His specialty was Roman style orgies with the best food, the best booze, the best drugs, and the best escorts. At the request of several obese members of Congress, Jack even installed an old Roman tradition: the barf-a-torium with feathers to tickle the back of the throat to empty their stomachs so they could continue to eat and drink. It disgusted Jack to have to provide these things to our so called upstanding pillars of government.

But that's over with. America has gone through a dramatic change. Now it's the People he entertains. This time it's without the obligatory recreational chemicals, escorts, and other stupid things. The local voters decided to allow Jack to keep his estate if he converted it to a bed and breakfast, with him and his family as employees. As it turned out, Jack's estate is so large that the buildings after some modifications can now easily accommodate more than 100 families. He has a mongo sized swimming area with a waterpark. There is also a miniature golf course, a playground, tennis courts, indoor air conditioned racquetball courts, basketball courts, a go-cart track, a nature walk with horseback riding trails, bike trails, and a petting zoo. All these nice compliments to Jack's bed and breakfast make it a very popular B&B in the DC area.

Helicopters aren't just for the very rich anymore. Washington, DC has a nice helicopter shuttle service, and Jack has a large tarmac with a helipad that has a state of the art omnidirectional glide slope for IFR landings. Jack also put in a computerized traffic controller to safely handle the ever increasing load of helicopter traffic in and out of his B&B. Arriving in a helicopter is great for those who don't like to drive. For those who own one, the tarmac is big enough to park at least thirty choppers. Plus there are several temperature controlled hangers. The facility provides a bus service to the major attractions in Washington, DC. So it's not really necessary for the patrons to bring a car. Jack had several extreme security measures installed years ago including an underground bunker and a threat detection and ordnance deployment system. Because of the quasi-military nature of the facility and the potential guests that would require special protection, the People thought it would be wise to have Jack, his family, and his employees go through top level military training so they could obtain security clearances from the People's government.

At first the transition after the Big Change was really hard on Jack and his family. Jack was making \$35 million a year with United Health Care. Now he's bringing in \$360,000 a year. And thankfully the bed and breakfast isn't a burden for Jack because with the high demand it easily sustains itself. For him it's not so much the money anymore. It's the people. He honestly gets real joy out of making people happy. And, he was lucky enough to keep his staff of world class chefs. Now they prepare culinary delights for people who haven't been exposed to such. Jack buys the best organically grown food he can find. Here's an example. [Annie's Acres](#). He loves to stand in his restaurant and see the faces light up with their first bite. And it's funny listening to kids say to their parents "You want me to eat that yucky stuff? What is it? It looks different. No, momma. Don't make me eat it." Then he comes back later to see they've eaten it

all. Cleaned their plates and some are asking for more. It's these simple things that make life good for Jack.

"Hello. My name is Norma Corona. Before we go on I just wanted to tell you a little about myself. I was born and raised in Newark, New Jersey. Some people say I look exactly like this old picture of a 60's singer named [Rosie](#) Méndez Hamlin. Except my eyes are bright green. I'm a little short at 5'5" and I weigh 125 pounds. Since the Big Change I've turned it all into muscle. I'm an easy going person. When I was in school, I didn't like course boisterous pushy people. Then there were the manipulators who said one thing to your face and later stabbed you in the back. And then there were the few super achievers in school who didn't eat in order to stay skinny. And they exercised until they collapsed. And they deprived themselves of sleep by staying up till two in the morning studying to make straight A's. That's wasn't for me. I just wanted to have fun and enjoy life with my homies. I didn't want to spend all my waking hours stressing out."

"I've always had a love for fashion. I used to draw beautiful clothing ensembles that I'm sure would have been a big hit. But I didn't know how to get into the business. First, I didn't know the right people who would show me. Second, I didn't think I was smart enough to be successful. I made average grades in school. The teachers in my school weren't the best. Getting us kids motivated wasn't important to them. They just wanted to put their time in. If you cared to listen that was ok. If you didn't want to listen, that was ok too. I felt they were there mostly to collect a paycheck. And they never really controlled the classroom. That was sad. The principal Mario Santos and the vice-principal Thelma Jones were next to worthless. They both have a Phd. That stands for "Pathetically Hopeless Dumbbell". We're ranked 319 out of 328 in Jersey. But I loved school because of my peeps. I miss my home girls at East Side High. From time to time I'll still see one, and they'll run up and give me a hug and we'll talk about the old times with the "Sistas". That's what we called our gang. Now I work at a store with lots of employees and customers. It's nice too, but not like school. And then there was Marco, my high school sweetheart and ex-husband. He's very handsome and charming and told me all the things I wanted to hear. "My heart stops every time I see you. I'm so lucky to have found my one true love." But then we got married and after three kids he started saying this to younger girls with firmer bodies that fell for that kind of pretentious nonsense. Oh well. Men are like busses. If you miss the one you wanted, don't worry. Another one will come along soon. But don't forget, they're only there to give you a ride. Yes, I have a bad taste in my mouth about men, but they can be sooo handsome. My friend at work said I'm pathologically conflicted. It's like I enjoy eating delicious homemade peach ice cream when I know there's a few nasty maggots at the bottom. Marco did help make three beautiful perfect little girls. So thanks, Marco. And like the girl in this [video](#), my little munchkins very much love and appreciate everything I've done for them. Te quiero, mijas (*I love you, my daughters*). I also like my neighbor's [cats](#). Now on to the story."

Three bouncy excited kids pile out of Norma's SUV. They can't wait to jump into the enormous bigger than Olympic sized swimming pool. The giant shallow end has a water park with a bunch of fun water slides. One is over 60 feet high with circles and twists all the way down. Ten years ago, if somebody told Norma she would be making \$120,000 a year tax free she would wonder what in the hell they were smoking. But yet there she was, a 30 year old from Newark with a

modest education working as a stocker and checkout clerk at Wal-Mart. But because of the Big Change she's now being paid directly by the People of the United States without having to hope and dream that someday her previous employers, the tightwads Jim, Rob, and Alice Walton might be generous enough to pay her enough money to have a good life. Alice surrounded herself with billions in art while she grossly underpaid her employees. But that's all over with.

One of the benefits of the Big Change is the weekly posting on the internet of all open jobs in America indexed either by location, type, pay, or education and proficiency requirements. Almost two years ago after her required police training and year spent on the Newark police force was completed, she thought about changing jobs but she actually loves working at Wal-Mart because she's a people person. She likes the constant contact with lots of good people from all walks of life. Since the People of the United States took over the government, Norma has noticed her customers are so much happier. You can see it in the way they walk, the way they're so friendly to each other. Talking, laughter, and smiles are everywhere. They've even changed and broadened the merchandise mix in the store to genuinely meet the needs of the customers instead of stocking cheap foreign made merchandise that has the highest profit margins. In fact, only mostly American made merchandise and healthy delicious food mostly grown in America can be sold at Wal-Mart. Norma is thinking why in the world would she want to leave such a place. And besides, her mom and dad live nearby and she believes her kids need to be around their grandparents. Life is too short and memories are too precious.

"Connie, Sophia, Nellie. Stay close to me," said Norma, "I want to know where you're at at all times. We have to check in before we do anything. Ok?" Connie, the oldest, said "Ok mom, but hurry! The pool is calling us. Can't you hear it?" "Sure, mija (*pronounced "me ha" It means my daughter*). Calma te (*calm down*). This will take just a few minutes." Norma looked over to the person behind the counter, "Hello. I have a reservation. It's for Norma Corona plus three children." After a few moments at the computer screen, the concierge said "Yes, here you are. Your reservation is for seven days. Is that correct?" "Yes." smiled Norma. In ten minutes they're in their room and unpacked. The girls had their swimsuits on and were scolding mom for being so slow. The anticipated day was chalk full of fun for the girls. First thing were the water slides. The man at the front desk told Norma the slides are similar to those at the [Seaworld waterparks](#) but on a smaller scale.

As the family was walking through the B&B to go to the waterslides, Connie paused in one of the rooms and looked around at the wall accessories and the furnishings. "Mom, this place is beautiful. Look at all the paintings, and the nice furniture. It looks like a king used to live here." Then she ran over and sat down on a rich mahogany 18th century French provincial embroidered sofa. Connie cracked a smile, looked at her mom and said "Mother dear, would you call a kitchen servant to bring a spot of tea and some crumpets." Norma's eyes rolled "Longing for the good old days when the rich had servants, huh babe?" Sophia, Connie's younger sister, cracked up and said "Connie, your skin's too brown. You would've been one of the servants. Hahahaha." Little Nellie yelled "Come on guys, stop fooling around. Let's go water sliding." Connie looked at her sisters and said "Ok. Ok... Race you to the pool..."

The girls screamed with joy as they rode down the assortment of water slides. They went head first, feet first, sideways, and in a ball. Up and down, up and down, up and down they went.

After a long while the crew finally ran out of steam. They ran over to their mom and got covered with more sunscreen. Then they decided to get some air mattresses and float out on the pool near their mom and away from the slides so they could rest and soak in some sun.

"Hi." said Connie to a girl about a year older floating next to her, "Have you checked out the slides yet." The other girl said "Yeah, for two hours. I didn't know fun would get you so tired." "Yeah, right." agreed Connie, "My name is Connie and these are my two little sisters Sophia and Nellie." "Como te va. (*How's it going?*) My name is Guadalupe but everybody calls me Lupe. I'm here with my dad. Are you going to the Peoples Monument and Museum too?" "That's the museum I read about that covers the Big Change, and has that monster sized amusement park, right?" asked Connie. "Right." said Lupe. (*Lupe is currently 13 years old, but this is what she's going to look like when she's about 16. She looks like the girl wearing the boots and riding the horse in this [video](#). This is a cute nonsensical kid's video in Spanish. The singer in this video looks like Connie but here the singer is 13 years old and Connie is only 12. Like in the video, Connie has her mom's green eyes.*)

"Coming here was very important for me and my dad." "Oh? Why's that?" asked Connie. Lupe said years ago she and her dad became homeless. "Then after six months they took me away from my dad to live in a foster home because he wasn't making enough money to take care of me. Six months go by and the police came to the home and told my foster parents that my dad died. A month later the Big Change happened. Because everybody had money now, the two other kids at the home were reunited with their parents. But I had to stay. Then a few weeks later this beautiful blue pickup turned into the driveway and there he was. My dad had found me and was taking me to our new home. We were a family again. It was the happiest day of my life. The police made a mistake when they said he died. Now we're here to visit the museum to give thanks to the American People for giving us a new life."

Connie said, "Wow, I thought we had it bad, but at least we stayed together. You wouldn't believe the times we snuck out of our apartment at night because we couldn't pay the rent. But even though they were poor, mom knew our family could always go to our abuelitos (*grandparents*) home if she was out of money."

"It's nice having relatives," said Lupe, "But almost all of dad's are in Mexico. And mi madre gabacha mimada mierda (*my White pampered excrement of a mother*) left us. She couldn't handle being homeless and she couldn't find any work so she abandoned us to go live with her mom. And her pinche family and relatives didn't want us "goddam Messkins" around. "Forget them!" said Connie.

"Yeah, but my foster parents were White and they treated me like a princess. And the other kids at the home were White too and they were my friends. Most everybody I've known in the past few years since the Big Change have been very good to me. Black, White, Brown, Yellow, or Green, it doesn't matter. And my mother is very beautiful, so I guess that was the reason my papi ignored the bigots in her family."

Connie said, "Hey, me and my sisters are going to play miniature golf after lunch. You wanna come along?" Lupe said "Sure. I'll ask my dad to see if he wants to play too."

About this time Antonio walked up to the side of the pool where Lupe was floating and said "Mijita (*My little daughter*), quieres algo para comer (*would you like something to eat*)? The concierge told me they have very good food here. He said the hamburgers are delicious. They're made from ground sirloin from pesticide free, hormone free, grass fed [Limousin beef](#) from an environment friendly farm in Pennsylvania." Lupe said "Sure, papi. This is Connie, can she come and eat some hamburgers with us? Are you hungry, Connie?" Connie looked over at her sisters and asked "Sophia, Nellie, are you hungry?" They yelled "Of course we are. Are we going to McDonalds?" Connie responded "No, it's something better."

Then Connie called out to her mom who was relaxing reading a book on a big comfy chaise lounge next to the pool. "Mom, can we go eat now?" Norma said "If you're ready, I am." Antonio walked over to Norma and introduced himself as Connie's new friend's father, Antonio Solis, but everybody called him Tony. Norma was breathless for a moment as Tony was introducing himself. Tony reminded Norma of [Joey Montana](#). Tony is 5'10" tall. He is a very handsome charismatic well-built man of about 30 with impeccable manners. Tony said "My daughter has taken a liking to Connie. Would you mind if we all ate together?" As Norma was getting lost in his eyes she barely muttered "Uh... Uh..., it's a pleasure to meet you... Wa... What were you saying?" Connie had already gotten out of the pool and was standing next to Norma and said "Mo...om". Then she turned to Tony and concluded "It's ok, I uh... think my mom likes you, so let's go eat." "Pues vamonos." (*So, let's go.*) said Lupe. But first they decided to go back to their rooms to shower the swimming pool off their skin and then meet at the entrance of the restaurant.

The restaurant is part of Jack's old guest house. The ambience is very nice. Jack had expanded it. He put in a solarium, an inside waterfall, a large aquarium and plants everywhere. The pool with the waterpark are next to the restaurant, so Jack put in an Oceanside motif with seashells, fishing nets, pirate sails, a small cannon, and other objects you'd find on an old sailing ship.

They gathered at the entrance and went in. The hostess greeted them and said they only had long picnic type benches near the aquarium and would that be ok? They said "Of course", and they were seated. Sitting next to them on the bench was a woman about 29 years of age with her son. She turned to the newly seated group and said "Hi, I hear the food is out of this world. Have you eaten here yet?" Norma sitting next to her said "No, but we've heard the same thing. My name is Norma and these are my three girls, Connie, Sophia, and Nellie. And we just met these two nice people earlier at the pool. This is Tony and his daughter Lupe." "It's a pleasure. My name is Laurie Jones and this is my son Travis." Everybody said hi.

Sophia, who was about the same age as Travis, got up and walked by her mom saying she was going to look at the fish in the giant aquarium. As she passed Travis she asked him if he wanted to look at the fish too. He turned to his mom and she nodded her head in approval. The aquarium was fifteen feet long and eight feet high. There's a certain awe one feels when looking at sea creatures. The way they effortlessly glide through the water staring more at you than you at them. Every once in a while one will move at lightning speed to avoid some perceived danger. "Mom," said Sophia, "What are these bright yellow and purple fish?" Travis looked at Sophia and said "They're [angel fish](#). They come from the tropics. Pretty, aren't they." Sophia gazing at their beauty said "They sure are. How did you know about them?" "My mom's a teacher. She

teaches political science and biology in high school. We have a small library in our home of government and natural science books."

Norma overheard Travis and looked at Laurie and said "That's interesting. You teach subjects that don't relate at all to each other." "Yeah, while I was getting a degree in biology, I had a boyfriend who was a political activist. He drew me into the organism of societal wrongs. So I spent an extra year of intensive study to get a poli sci degree too. Then he sold out by taking a banking job and left me with a beautiful baby boy and a passion for politics." "Life can be full of surprises," said Tony who was sitting across from Laurie. "Boy, that's for darn sure." responded Laurie.

She looked at Norma and Tony and asked "Three years ago, did you really think we would follow through with the Big Change? I sure didn't. I'm too fatalistic. There was no way we were going to do something that good for us. It's totally against our history and the history of humankind for that matter. But yet..... here we are. The biggest worry I have now is getting my son to soccer practice on time. Tell you what, life... is... goooood." Tony said "It really is, Laurie. My daughter and I are together, and she's happy. That's all I care about."

Norma said "Now I don't have to steal off into the night because I couldn't pay my rent because that evil Walton woman, Alice, wasn't paying me enough. Well that's all changed now. I actually bought a house last year. And it has four bedrooms. Sweet."

Tony smiled and added "Yes, but remember right after the Big Change; there were strange shortages like gasoline, candy bars, sodas, pizza, frozen foods, chips, and beer. Who would have thought." They laughed. "Yeah, it took at least a year for all of us to stop going crazy trying to spend our monthly paychecks." said Laurie, "Then our wonderful ex-NSA system was finally able to forecast our needs in order to avoid shortages and they set up rationing on things that were hard to come by. You know..... collecting every piece of information on everybody and everything in our country was exactly what we needed the most to make the Big Change a success." Laurie very angrily said "God bless those little pieces of excrement in the now defunct old government!"

Tony with a concerned look said "Its ok, Laurie. Let it go, babe. You don't need to get all worked up anymore. It's over. We won." Norma added "That's right, life is good. Let's get some beers to celebrate. How about it? I can't wait for tomorrow when we go to the museum. Did you guys sign up too?"

Tony said "If it's to the Big Change Monument and Museum, you bet. That's why we came to DC. It's our way of saying thanks to the People for giving us a new life. I read there's a large room in the museum that has one inch square images of all the voters in America. The room is kept dark and is 600 feet square with over 60 seven foot high partitions all packed solid with bright electronic images of all voting Americans. They call it the Control Room. The room symbolizes who's running the country now. I read if the Big Change actually saved your life you can, if you want, go to laptops at one end of the room and write about it. The NSA database checks if the author is telling the truth and if they are, what is written is saved for posterity and a blue star will light up in the ceiling to let the people know another life or another family had

been saved because of the Big Change. The blue light will be bright for 10 minutes then it will dim and be like looking at a star in the night sky. That will be our way of giving thanks to the American People."

"That's pretty cool," said Norma, "I wanna go to the betterments section that shows all the good stuff that's happened since we took control. And my daughters want to go to the amusement park. They say it's the largest indoor park in the world." In an excited voice Connie said "The rollercoaster goes 200 feet high and up to seventy miles an hour. That's the first ride I want to go on, mom. I hear it's like [the Disney one](#) in California."

Little Nellie got up and went over to Norma and said "Mom... After that I wanna go feed the beautiful birds in the [giant cage](#)." "And mom... Connie said they have a 3d [Northern Lights](#) show on the ceiling of the amusement park. They do it after the fireworks show just before closing. And the music was written by a girl about my age when she saw how beautiful the lights were. Can we stay up and see it? Please." "Mija, we're going to have a long day tomorrow and you'll be too tired to stay up that late. Tell you what, we'll sleep in the next day, and leave later so we can be up at closing. Is that ok with you, baby?" "It's a deal. Thank you, mom." "Great, now go sit down, mija."

Laurie said "Travis is really excited about the amusement park, too. But for me, I just want to stand there in the biggest section I can find and look at all the people. I want to feel our greatness and what we've accomplished."

Their waitress walked up "Hi, my name is Tobi, and I'll be your waitress today. Would you like to start off with something to drink?" The adults ordered some beers and the kids, except for little Nellie, ordered special fizzy pop colas and root beer that's naturally sweetened and flavored. Nellie wanted a frosty mug of "chocolaty milk". Norma told the waitress they were ready to give their orders, if that was ok. Tobi said "Of course." All the kids ordered a [pirate's cheeseburger](#) with pieces of eight [baked fries](#). A special house ranch dressing with fresh herbs is provided in cups to dip the healthy delicious fries into. Ketchup and mustard are still on the tables for the traditionalists. Norma ordered a ship's captain's [lobster tail](#) including a side of sautéed asparagus with a splash of hollandaise sauce. Laurie ordered the surf and turf which was a small grilled bacon-wrapped filet mignon accompanying a perfectly grilled half portion of lobster tail served on a pillow of risotto. She skipped the sides to have room for her favorite dessert, baked [Alaska](#). Tony ordered the Cuban shipmate's Vieiras Al Ajillo (*Cuban style Scallops in Garlic*). His side was a papaya, glass noodle and prawn salad.

After a few minutes, Tobi came out with the drinks. Norma got everybody's attention then held her beer up. Everyone else raised their glass, too. She said, "Arriba, abajo, al centro y pa' dentro". Then they all took a drink. She looked at Laurie and said "That means up, down, middle, and inside. It's not as cute in English. How about a toast from you, Laurie." "Sure. Since we're in a seafood place how about this: May your joys be as deep as the ocean, and your misfortunes as light as its foam." They clanked their drinks and took a swallow. "Aaaaah, this is really good beer," said Tony, "It's been years since I've had Pacifico." Norma said "That's a good beer, but even though my last name is Corona, I really love this DC Brau. It's brewed right here in the city. Since the People took over, the companies aren't using propylene glycol and

other harmful chemicals to brew Corona, Budweiser, and Miller/Coors. Propylene glycol is used as an airplane deicer for god's sake. This is the type of thing and the reason why the People needed to take over and end this total "for-profit" anti-humanity capitalistic society!"

Laurie said "Well I love to eat at BJ's in Houston. That's where we live. They make their own brew with all natural ingredients. My favorite is the [Brewhouse Blonde](#). It's really smooth. But you can't get it here, so my fall back is this Samuel Adams. Tastes good but it's a little strong." Connie perked up said "My favorite is this reserve [A&W Root Beer](#) that's only available certain times of the year, and it must only be served at 33 degrees. Hehehehe." Norma looked at Connie and said "Portate bien, Canija" (*behave yourself, you little rascal*).

After about fifteen minutes of the group getting to know each other, four servers came out carrying the completed orders. When all the plates were down Tony said, "If you don't mind, Lupe and I would like to give thanks before we eat." Laurie said "Of course, let's do it." They all held hands and after an earnest prayer they dove in and finished up in no time flat. "That was yummy, mom" said little Nellie, "It was a lot better than McDonalds. I liked dipping my fries in the yummy ranch sauce." "I'm glad, baby," smiled Norma.

After the Big Change the People mandated that restaurant portions be made smaller so food wouldn't be wasted and people would be able to control their weight better. If patrons were still hungry, a salad bar was always available.

Connie looked around the table with bright eyes "Who's ready for a few rounds of miniature golf." All the kids yelled "I am!" The adults weren't so anxious. Tony said "How about we stay here for a few more minutes and let our food settle." "I second that." said Laurie. Lupe smiled and reached over to Tony's stomach and patted it saying "Settle down... settle down, tummy." The kids laughed.

[Miniature golf, go-carting, cookout](#)

Finally the kids were able to drag the slow folks out to have a little fun hitting some balls. It's an 18 hole putting course with all kinds of obstacles. There's the windmill, the haunted house, the swinging log, the pinball ramps, a wild animal jungle trail with animals like a lion snapping his mouth open and shut. You have to putt through a pirate's cave and under waterfalls with a narrow bridge. Don't forget the pirate's ship and walking the gangplank and splashing down to Davy Jones' locker. And if you're lucky you can find some pieces of eight. Jack made sure this course had all kinds of fun built into it.

"Mom, I'm scared" confided little Nellie, "I just saw a real pirate walking around. Looook, over there! Momeeee!" "Don't worry baby, I'm here. That mean old pirate won't hurt you." "Good. Let's get started. I've got my club and I'm ready!" All eight of them gathered at the first hole which was the windmill. In front was a couple in their late twenties timing the passing of the windmill blades. His bounced off and she made it through. "Looks like this is going to be my lucky day." she said. She looked over at Laurie "If you hit the ball easy it will be a three count before it reaches the windmill. You time the windmill movement, and bingo you're through. Hi, I'm Alejandrina or Alex for short. This is my boss Steve Smith. We work at Levi Strauss." Laurie said "It's always fun when you mix work and pleasure." Alex paused and said "Yeah, it's

fun to have business as an excuse to have fun. We saw this cute little course as we drove in and said why not." Alex looked over at Steve and said "That's one for me and zip for you Steve." She was teasing him as they moved on to the next hole.

Tony, Laurie, and Norma missed, but all the kids made it through on their first try. The next obstacle was the haunted house with ghosts feeding on corpses making ghoulish [sounds](#) inside. Tony was the first one there. He introduced himself and asked Alex about Levis. "Alex, I guess the People made Levis move their manufacturing back to the States." Alex said "You bet. I worked for Levis in Guatemala for three years as the chief line manager. Then word came down that we were closing operations and moving to a big facility in San Antonio. Since I was a citizen of the United States I was offered a position there to help make the transition easier. I was born and raised in El Paso. It's been really great living in the States again. I don't have to watch my back anymore because of angry underpaid, overworked criada esclava (*servant slave*) machine operators. The Big Change has made my life so much better." "Keep on talking to her so she'll miss." said Steve. "No way, Stevie boy. See. That's two to zip."

Tony then putted and barely made his ball past a man-eating ghoul. Then Lupe putted and made hers through. Lupe walked up next to her daddy and softly said "Alex is very hot, papi. Be careful. Ella es mala suerte (*She is bad luck*)." Tony leaned over and put his arm around his daughter and said "It's nice to know somebody's watching over me. But don't worry, mija. I can see those two are married but not to each other. She touches him a lot in the wrong places. It's a way of life for some. I hear it's especially true for those Levis people. But that lifestyle isn't for me. I'd like a soul mate, not a puta (*whore*)." "Ok dad," said Lupe, "I'll see if I can find a good soul mate for you." Tony said "Let's not worry about that. I'm plenty happy. Ready to go to the next hole?"

In the meantime, Norma was at the back of the pack. Behind her she met the nicest couple. Both were police officers in New York City. Joe works in homicide and Glenda works in the white collar crime division. They've been on the force for twenty years. As they were playing the hole, Glenda told Norma how her work has really shifted since the Big Change.

"Nobody has to worry about money anymore except for those people who are here illegally. That's because people can only spend out of their bank account. If you don't have an account, you ain't got no money. New York City has one camera for every five people and facial recognition software and ID sensors are running on all of them. A non-citizen is identified almost immediately."

"And the typical con artist chiseling people out of money is almost gone. People have to purchase using their face, fingerprint, and the internal blood vein structure in their right hand. Like I just said, the only way to pay for things is out of their bank account. Now fortune tellers and "healers" are taking things people own as payment for their services. Like a car. But that's even difficult because only the owner can drive their car since the car checks the driver's eyes, fingerprints, and the DNA in their breath. But people are always finding ways around safeguards." And it all seems stupid when everybody is making at least \$120,000 a year tax free!

Glenda continued "And now we have people sneaking merchandise out of the country. Warehouses are robbed and the goods are put into overseas shipping containers. And it's becoming a very big problem. So instead of people robbing banks, they're robbing warehouses. Eventually we'll get all our consumable products protected and secure. Then you have guys working for large manufacturers who falsify government documents that permit export out of the States. It's all a big circus. But we eventually catch them. Too many safeguards."

"Our biggest deterrent now is the new form of punishment." Norma said, "Yeah, I heard. The length of the sentences are very short now, but 8 times a day the prisoner is taken to a room where they're shocked with high voltage cattle prods ([click](#)) and other shocking devices." "Ain't that a hoot," said Glenda, "The people convicted of serious crimes get the most sensitive spots on their body shocked every other hour. There's lots of screaming, crying, and begging but it doesn't actually injure their bodies. And a lot of the time, they shock the prisoners in their cells so the other inmates can hear the screaming." Norma said "Geeze." Glenda continued "After a couple years with the new forms of punishment our prison populations are down to almost nothing. The People of America figured a person is more valuable working as a contributing member of society. And being with their family raising their kids is much more important than wasting away in a prison cell. America has five percent of the earth's population. But before the Big Change 25% of the earth's prisoners were here in America. That was over two million people! And it was gradually increasing. Jailing people was big business. Did you know large corporations only paid prisoners 21 cents an hour to make stuff. And it was forced labor. What a racket."

Norma said "I heard the Big Change cleaned up all the dirty lawyers and judges." Glenda said "You bet. Years ago it was really a pain in the butt when I'd bring in rich guys for stealing or DWI and the judges would let them off with a slap on the wrist. Come to find out these judges were on the take. Attorneys would work out deals with judges and then they'd get money under the table. It was a big circus. But all that stopped when the People mandated that all police, judges, and attorneys go through a battery of polygraph tests. They tried to hide behind the 5th amendment but the People said sorry Charlie, we want to know if you're dirty or not. Many tried to run away out of the country, but they were stopped. So the long and short of it was thousands of judges and attorneys and police ended up in jail with nice long taser treatments." Norma laughed. Glenda continued "And as a result of these polygraph tests, they discovered thousands of people were wrongly convicted of crimes. In those instances the dirty attorney, judge, or policeman was sentenced for life to work on a prison farm." Norma said "Justice for those who made a mockery of our legal system! Sweet." Norma continued "I even read some attorneys working for Jeff Bezos at Amazon bribed some members of the Supreme Court." Glenda said "Yeah, I heard about that. Amazon was making employees go through an inspection line with metal detectors to make sure they weren't stealing. Sometimes employees had to wait twenty to thirty minutes in line before they could leave. The employees were saying they should be paid for that time but the Supreme Court ruled against them. Even though it was for the convenience of the employer on the employer's premises, they ruled against the employees and they didn't get paid for that time." Norma said "And after several of the Justices were forced to go through polygraph testing we found out just how corrupt and dirty some of the Justices really were. They had secret numbered accounts on the Cayman Islands and were making a killing off of bribes." Glenda responded "And all those decisions hurt American workers."

"And remember when young people used to play the knock out game and other random acts of violence? They don't do that anymore because they're identified almost immediately. And now, regarding crimes and punishment, everybody 13 years and older are treated as adults." Norma said "Along with alcohol, I hear marijuana is legal now for people 21 and older. But they set limits for amounts in our bloodstream. And people are randomly tested. Now there are drugs that cause cocaine and marijuana not to be addictive. And there are other medicines to get cocaine and meth users sick and throw up uncontrollably. Some parents are slipping it in their teenagers' food."

"I hear if you accidentally kill somebody while driving a car under the influence you're immediately executed. Is that right?" "That's true," said Glenda, "I guess moms against drunk drivers played a big role in getting a voting majority to pass that measure. But the catch is the killer has to be identified beyond any question or doubt. They have to be on video actually killing the person." Norma said "You know, that punishment is really harsh." Glenda said "But it's saved a lot of lives." "Let me ask you something," said Glenda, "If you're out drinking beer you instinctively stop after two now don't you." "Yep." said Norma, "When I went out partying I used to drink four or five. But not anymore. I don't want to accidentally kill anybody and immediately be shot for it. I hear even if you severely cripple a person you can be executed." "That's true," said Glenda, "It's a different world now. We have many wonderful things, but if we go around killing or crippling people because of being drunk our time on earth is ended. As far as I can see, that's the only draconian punishment we have now." "Good." replied Norma.

"Well we've finished three holes and how many more are left?" asked Glenda. "Fifteen" said Joe. Norma said goodbye to Joe and Glenda and started moving on ahead with her three girls. They're in a hurry so they can talk to the pirate a few holes down the way.

Glenda and Joe are taking their time with a moving obstacle at one of the holes. Melina and Chaz, a young couple, are waiting behind them. Glenda sees them out of the corner of her eye. They're getting lost in each other's arms. Glenda says "Aren't you two sweet. Wish my hubby would hold me like that more often." Joe's marriage radar goes off alerting him to watch out for what he says next. It's taken many years to develop and perfect his early warning system. Joe immediately stops, sets his golf club down and walks over to Glenda and says "Baby, you're the sparkle in my life. I'm so lucky to have you. Come here." Then he romantically embraces her and lays a big one on her lips. Then he says "I don't know what's wrong with my manners. Ladies always go first. I'll just wait here while you putt, Baby." Glenda said "Joe, you're really getting good at dodging my fast balls." "That's right, Baby. It's because I love you."

Joe looked at the young couple and said, "Hi, I'm Joe and this is my wife Glenda." Chaz said "Hi, glad to meet you. I'm Chaz and this is my wife Melina." "Wow, you're kind of young to be married. Maybe as I get older people just start looking younger." said Joe. Chaz confided "We're both 19, but we were high school sweethearts and we saw no reason to wait. Melina added "It's very nice because we can stay in the same room at the police academy."

That's right," said Joe, "All 19 year olds have to have police training, and then you work at least a year on the force." Chaz added "And we have to keep our peace officer's license active for the

rest of our life." Joe pointed out "You know at first I was uncomfortable with every 19 year old in America becoming a peace officer. But it's worked out very well. I can understand the reasoning behind the People's mandate. If a few were take power, they can dominate the unarmed masses with a military force. But if everybody is a police officer there are no longer any unarmed untrained masses. Simple logic. But I was afraid of everybody being armed with assault rifles and large amounts of ammo. We jokingly called it the power of mutually assured destruction."

Joe continued "But I've seen some great benefits from doing this. Most women who have gone through the training are no longer as vulnerable. In fact, a lot of women out of the academy can really kick ass. I've seen some petite little girls move like a stick of dynamite. And statistics show they keep a cooler head in dangerous situations. The other concern I had was domestic disturbances. It's been almost three years since the mandate so every 19, 20, and 21 year-old is a cop. If a young couple that age is arguing what's to keep them from shooting each other or us for that matter. But as we've seen, the police training has done more to control and reduce domestic violence than make it more dangerous. And part of the training is seeing the types of punishment we use in the prisons now. I guarantee you...nobody wants to be shocked eight times a day for 30 days. During our training, getting tazed just once was too many times for me." Joe smiled and admitted "But the best benefit of having everyone be a policeman is the average IQ has shot through the roof. We used to only have ex-athlete bully types who had C and D averages in high school. We're not an exclusive club for half a brain Neanderthals anymore." Chaz affirmed "Yeah, I heard during training last week that in the past two and a half years the People jailed over 25,000 police on brutality and corruption charges. And most of them were long time veterans in law enforcement. It got so bad that their sentences were lengthened with tasings 12 times a day. Once a week, police officers with over five years on the force are made to watch these tasings for ten minutes before starting their shift. And, if they don't have both video and audio recorders on at all times except when they are inside their homes, they immediately go to jail for thirty days with tasings. Our police computer systems know if an officer's recording equipment is shut off, even for just a few seconds. And we heard some overly aggressive cops are having their testicles removed before being released from jail. The People wanted the aggressiveness to go away like with neutered dogs and cats." Joe smiled and acknowledged "All the police were warned when the People took over. It's sad that we had so many corrupt dimwitted brutal baboons working in law enforcement."

Chaz said "Years ago I remember when the grand jury in Ferguson, Missouri didn't indict Darren Wilson for killing Michael Brown in cold blood. He could have easily shot him in the legs, but instead he unloaded his gun on him. It was discovered the prosecutor controlled the jury like a marionette on strings. It was revealed to the American public that the grand jury process was rigged. No judge presided at these hearings. And no attorneys were allowed to be present. Only the prosecutor. And he brought in a [witness](#) that lied to the grand jury. And he knew she was lying. Private detectives made secret recordings of the prosecutor in Ferguson after the decision. He was talking to one of his buds in a restaurant where he was recorded as saying "I wasn't about to let Darren Wilson go to jail even if he did kill that worthless nigger in cold blood. As we all know, the only good nigger is a dead nigger." When America found out, all hell broke loose, especially after the grand jury's decision in New York City not to prosecute Daniel Pantaleo for choking Eric Garner to death. For god's sake it was all on film. It was obvious Pantaleo

murdered him. And guess what, private detectives recorded the prosecutor saying Garner's death was no big loss, and there was no way in hell Pantaleo was going to jail for killing a nigger." Joe said "This was the kind of slavery period thinking that brought the American people to a boiling point. It was this kind of imbecilic crap that brought about the Big Change!"

As Joe was talking to Chaz they went through two holes and neither made par. Joe said "Do you have plans to make a career in law enforcement." Chaz said "No, not really. I'm going to work with my dad. He has a new photovoltaic cell manufacturing business. Last year I helped him after school and in the summer. You know it's been mandated that every building in America be outfitted with a PV system. And an extra set of panels have to be stored underground at the site in case we have a huge solar electromagnetic pulse."

Joe added "Yes, but we can't do that in vertical cities like New York. Instead, we're putting in massive solar arrays in buffer zones surrounding the city. I read the need for fossil fuels will be almost nothing after the People's energy projects are finished. Did you know we have the technology to make hydrogen and oxygen gas in little modules to supplement gasoline for cars?" Chaz said "Yeah, I read about it on the internet. The oil companies had the patents and were preventing them from being manufactured. The jerks."

"I also read about a new type of [air breathing](#) lithium battery that allows a car to go over 500 miles between recharges," revealed Chaz, "You can use a PV system to charge the batteries so you'll have zero fossil fuel pollution." Joe said "I didn't know about those batteries. But I heard the People are forcing companies to upload all their research and product designs onto the internet. No more stinginess and hiding technology just to make a buck. Except for cutting edge defense weapons, everything has become **open source**." "True," replied Chaz, "The lithium battery information was just uploaded on the internet last week, but the jerks at the company had the knowledge and kept it secret for years." Chaz chuckled "I'll bet those guys are in the "big house" getting their junk tased right now as we speak."

Further up the course were Connie, Sophia, Nellie, Lupe, and Travis. They finally caught up to that scary pirate. "Aaarrggghhh! Ahoy, me hearties!" said the pirate. Lupe said "Hi. Do you have any treasure?" "Lookin for some doubloons, are ye now?" said the pirate. "Well you won't find any here. They're in Davy Jones' Locker at the bottom of the ocean along with the spirits of the men I've killed. They're there to protect my booty from thieves like yourself. Aaarrggghhh!"

The smelly old pirate had a parrot on his shoulder that started screaming "pieces of eight, pieces of eight". Connie said "I've heard those lines so many times before. Don't you have any fresh material?" "Watch it little darlin, or I'll run you through with my cutlass." said the pirate. "Oh p_a_l_e_s_e, the only killing going on around here are your old pirate lines that are boring us to **death**," said Lupe. Little Nellie said "You don't scare me." Then she ran up and stomped on his foot. "Ouch! Dammit!... I mean... Watch what you're doin there, you little bilge sucking ship mouse. If you're not careful I'll cleave you to the brisket." said the pirate. "Oh yeah? You and what army? You're so fat you couldn't even catch me" said Nellie.

Lupe looked at the other kids and said "Let's book this place. How about doing some go-carts." All the kids yelled "Yea! Let's do it!" The adults were getting a little bored, too. After gathering everybody together, Norma said "With a show of hands, who wants to go the go-cart track." Tony, Laurie and all the kids wave their hands in excitement. "Ok. Let's go!" said Norma.

It was late afternoon and there wasn't much of a line at the go-cart track. It was a long track with a lot of twists and turns as well as a long straightaway for passing. The parents were making sure the kid's helmets were strapped and they were all buckled in. When Sophia sat down in her go-cart the cart said "Hey, take it easy. Give me some room. Move over a little." Sophia immediately sprang from the car and said "Mom...I think this car is haunted." "Don't worry. It's just me, the cart. Come back here and sit down. I'll move over." "Uh... I don't think so. Moooom... Why is this car talking to me?" "It's ok, Sophia," said Norma, "It's just a trick car. Here, see I'll trade go-carts with you." "Ok, mom."

Then Sophia got into Norma's car. She was ready. Norma then got into Sophia's car and it said "Hi, there. It's been a while since I've had such a hot Chica sit inside me. Ready to go crusin, Babe?" "Put a sock in it, Romeo. And mind your manners. God, I can't believe I'm talking to a go-cart." said Norma. "So what's your name?" asked the car. Norma said "Nunya." The car said "Nunya what?" Norma said "Nunya business, nosey." The car responded "I saw you admiring my sleek strong body with my hot tailpipes as you were walking up. Don't deny it. You know there's a spark between us." "Ok, that's enough. Just get me down the track. And don't say "I'll get you down anywhere you want", jerk. Be quiet or I'll open a can of whoop ass and turn you into a grease spot. Understand?" Then the car speaker went silent. Norma said "Good, let's go." The car said "you have to press the accelerator pedal to move." "Oh sh-t, that's right. You got me so flustered I forgot about the controls." "Sorry." said the car.

The race was 10 laps. Norma started at the back of the pack then gradually moved up. She finished first by edging out Tony on the last lap at the end of the straightaway. "Wow," exclaimed Norma, "You're a little too aggressive with women, but you can really tear out." "Yeah, they made me the fastest cart on the track to try to compensate for my bad manners." As Norma was getting out of the go-cart he said "Hope you come back soon por un *(for a)* ride in mi carrucha *(my car)*, mamacita *(babe)*. You got my number, right?" Norma turned back and snapped "Come caca, cabrón *(Eat excrement, butthead)*."

"That was fun." said Travis to his mom. "Let's go again." Laurie said "Not right now, honey. It's getting late and we need to clean up for dinner." The other parents agreed with Laurie. Tony mentioned tonight was cookout and campfire night. It starts at 9:00. Everybody thought it was a great idea, so they agreed to meet at the back of the restaurant at 9:00.

"Mom, is it going to be a weenie roast tonight?" asked little Nellie. Cause if it is, I want to toast some marshmallows too." "Honey, I don't know but I hope so. Now let's rest for a few hours before we go." Connie said "Mom, do you mind if I watch a little Ellen before I take a nap." "Sure baby, but just a little and then we'll take a nap." [\(click\)](#) After some TV and a nice two hour nap, Norma woke the crew and they started getting ready. Sophia was unwrapping a Baby Ruth and Norma admonished "What are you doing. Put that away. You'll spoil your appetite."

"Ok, mom. But I hope the food is good." replied Sophia. "Don't worry, I just talked to the front desk and they said the dogs are homemade using only the best meat and freshest spices. You'll love it. And they're going to have marshmallows, too," said Norma, "Girls, are you all ready?" Nellie said, "Momma, momma, let's go. The marshmallows are calling." "Ok, mija. Let's go."

They met in the back of the restaurant at 9:00. The sun had already set and the lighting was dim to enhance the feeling of camping. There were six large campfires spaced far apart with a circular railing to keep kids from falling in. The fire pits were surrounded by chairs and side tables. By the time they arrived the fires were reduced down and were mostly large piles of charcoaled wood burning a deep red. Lupe said "The fire's warm and it smells like mesquite. It reminds me of the Sandia chiles ([click](#)) we roasted over mesquite last month. Then we laid tortillas on the grill with some strips of asadero cheese ([click](#)) to gently warm before we put the Sandia's on. Those burritos were heavenly, papi." Tony smiled and nodded his head as he was putting a fresh homemade sausage on his skewer. "Mmmm, this sausage smells good" said Tony as it was heating over the embers.

Norma was busy with her girls as she was putting the sausages on the skewers and showing them how far down to put the skewers over the fire so the meat won't burn. "That's it, Nellie. Perfect. Remember to slowly turn it so it will cook evenly. And don't touch the part of the skewer that's been over the fire or you'll burn your fingers." "Ok. But mom, when it's ready will you take it off for me." "Sure, baby." The dogs were big and juicy and had a nice snap every time you bit into them. One was plenty filling. And, everybody wanted to save room for toasting marshmallows. A cook came out with a big bag of little white pillows of tasty delight for each fire. And for those really craving sweets he also brought out lots of Hershey's chocolate bars and several boxes of graham crackers. Connie said "Oh, mamma...S'mores! That's it...I love this place...let's don't ever leave."

[A scary story](#)

Everybody loves a campfire. It must be a primordial remnant of our past still locked into our DNA. The warmth, the color, the crackling, the smell of burning wood, and the stories. Something about a campfire that spurs the imagination. After everybody finished eating, nobody wanted to leave. To keep the fires going, every once in a while a cook threw on some more wood.

Tony asked if the kids wanted to hear a scary story. They all screamed "Yes!" "Ok then, said TonyIt was a moonless night just like tonight far away out in the desert, west of Presidio, Texas. It was hundreds of miles away from any big city. At night it's so dark you can see billions of tiny stars. And the Milky Way is a cloudy band of light stretching all the way across the night sky. But I'm getting ahead of myself. Let's start at the beginning."

"There were these two teenagers named Gene Hartley and John Andress. They just graduated from high school and wanted celebrate by hunting mountain lion. But to get into mountain lion country they had to go into the far reaches of the rugged desolate desert away from everything. Along their trek, they even had to travel many miles along a narrow twisting and turning gravel and rock road high up along the [Chinati desert mountains](#). In a few places the road was barely wide enough for a truck to pass. "Hey, Gene. Look down your side." Then John would laugh.

"I'll bet it's at least a thousand feet straight down. Don't pee your pants, you'll mess my truck up." John thought it was funny. One time they almost came off the road when some of it fell away because of a rock slide. "Not so funny now, huh John." Ocotillo, Spanish dagger, tiny barrel cactus, and some scrub brush were the only vegetation until they finally got down to the Rio Grande River."

"When they got to the river, over towards Presidio into the desert they saw a foreboding sight. It was an abandoned plane from decades ago. They went over to investigate and saw some strange holes in the fuselage. Like something had hit it causing it to crash land.



From that spot sixty miles away was the small village of Presidio where the Rio Conchos joins with the Rio Grande. To the right along the Rio Grande River was nothing but wild mountain desert country. Their best chance to find a lion was that direction. Back then in 1969, the road was paved for about 500 feet. Then it turned to gravel for a few miles. Then the road ended with only a rough trail that only a jeep or four-wheel drive pickup could travel. The going was slow but steady. Gene had a detailed map of that part of Texas, but it didn't show the trail or the settlement they were coming up to."

As they drove up they saw three small primitive adobe buildings that looked like they were from the 1800s. Gene got out of the truck to investigate. He felt veery strange as his boots were walking across the desert floor. He came up to one of the buildings and slowly pushed open the creaking door. Then he gradually and carefully moved to look inside. A lizard jumped from the ceiling onto his hair and it let out an unearthly screech like [this](#). Gene quickly brushed it off his head and it fell to the floor and disappeared. He got his composure back and started looking around. It appeared like a hundred years ago somebody left the place in a hurry leaving everything behind. He saw a bed with dusty covers. A cooking area with table and chairs. Even a loaded shotgun near the door. The room smelled like a dead body. The hair raised on the back of Gene's neck when he saw a chair slowly moving towards him. Gene turned and ran back to the truck so fast his feet barely touched the ground. He told John about what he saw. John said "Let's get out of here. There's something wrong with this place." So they continued down the trail for another 20 miles. It was around 6:00 in the evening when they started getting a little

tired and hungry. John saw a rabbit on the right. He slowed down and stopped. He whispered... "See, he's right there hiding behind the mesquite. See his ears stickin up. Put a bead on that and we'll have some fresh meat for dinner." Gene carefully aims and takes the jackrabbit down with one shot. John walks over and picks him up by the ears and carries him over to the truck where they gut and skin him." The girls sitting around the fire go "Yuk! That's disgusting." Tony continued "It was disgusting because his intestines had worms. But John said that just makes the rabbit taste better. Then they put the meat in one of the ice chests for dinner.

"Wonder what mountain lion tastes like?" asked Gene. John said a few years ago his dad took one down at the foothills of the Eagle Mountains near the pass where the Buffalo soldiers were slaughtered by Apache Indians back in 1880. (John's dad, Guy Andress, as a young man had bulldozed several hundred acres of desert land next to the river on the west side of the Eagles creating a farm to grow cotton. After spending his childhood in this wild country John knew how to survive in case there was trouble.) "The meat was very tasty. Last year he just missed killing one along the river over at goat canyon about 40 miles south of Sierra Blanca, Texas. He woke up to find lion tracks all over the campsite. Good thing the pickup had a camper shell. After dad and my uncle finished breakfast they went out to see if they could spot him. After hours of following tracks they gave up. Dad said he just disappeared. So they started walking back to camp. About that time my uncle had a feeling he was being watched. He immediately turned around and high on a large boulder was the mountain lion looking down like he was sizing them up and deciding which one would be the best to eat. Dad quickly raised his gun and shot. But in that split second of raising his gun the lion moved and dad thinks he shot his tail because he heard a big yelp from that polecat. They went over to where he was but saw nothing."

Gene said "Maybe we'll have better luck." John responded "Like we talked about earlier, mountain lions are very smart." We'll be the ones being stalked by the lion. If there's one around within a few miles he already knows we're here. So tomorrow we'll take a nice stroll up that draw with the high canyon walls and maybe he'll show himself."

"They set up camp about 500 feet from the river on a high spot at the base of the draw. Gene went and checked out the terrain.



"They also went down into the river to see if the fishing was good. But the catfish weren't biting."



"Rabbit cooked over a campfire is delicious. Just make sure it's cooked well cause rabbits sometimes get hookworms in their muscles. They both had their rifles and pistols out in case a mountain lion or some coyotes decided to visit. Pickens were pretty slim out there in that part of the desert and a nice 200 pound slab of meat would be pretty tempting to a predator. A little bit of beans tasted good with that jackrabbit."



"It started getting late as the campfire drew down. They decided to turn in so they could have an early start in the morning. They put the fire out and started walking over to the back of the pickup where they were going to catch some z's. Then suddenly John sees something move in the darkness. John said in a low voice, "Gene raise your rifle. We might have to shoot. Just don't shoot me. Ok? It was in that direction. Just keep walking to the truck. We'll walk with our backs facing each other so we can see every direction." After walking about twenty steps Gene saw a shadow moving. There he was...about 100 feet away. Gene quickly whispers "There he is. I'll get down and shoot, and you turn around and shoot. Just as he was about to attack, both rifles were fired and both missed their fast moving target. The mountain lion ran away, hoping for a better time and place to attack. Then a very odd thing happened. In the distance John and Gene heard the mountain lion screaming like something was ripping him apart. Gene said "Let's go check it out." "Are you crazy? Something probably just killed that lion. We don't want to get anywhere near it or we're dead meat, too." John said, "Make sure the fire's completely out. Don't turn on any flashlights. Throw your rifle in the pickup and keep your pistol in your holster. We need to get over to the river and wait. We're not safe in the pickup." So they made it fast down to the river. "Be ready to quietly sink into the water. Here take this reed to breathe through... in case you need to."

"They were standing behind the cover of some cypress trees and cattails. "Don't say a word and don't make any noise when you move. In fact don't move unless we have to go in the water." John had eagle like vision. It was about 15 minutes later when John saw some movement up at the campsite. The stars gave off just enough light to be able to see shadows move. John turned to Gene and motioned to step down into the water. Each slowly went in and edged their way downstream a few feet at a time. They stopped about 300 feet from where they entered the water."

"This is what being in the river looks like before sundown.



But now it was dark and the river was really scary with who knows what swimming in the water with you. The bosque along the side of the river was thick with water cypress. And the small patches of cattails in the water made for good cover. After about 10 minutes they saw some shadow movement near the point where they entered the water. John motioned to Gene to go down. They put the reeds in their mouths and stayed under water. About 5 minutes go by and John slowly raises his eyes out of the water to see what's happening. About 50 feet from him through the trees he clearly sees the thing that killed the mountain lion. (...pause...*Tony one at a time slowly looked into the eyes of all the kids...*) It looked half man and half rabbit. He stood at least nine feet tall with huge buck teeth, long rabbit ears, and long sharp claws. John then looked left up the river where they got in the water and saw another rabbit man going into the water and was slowly coming towards them. They were searching the river bank and in the water. "Uh-oh, we're gonna die!" thought John."

"But right at that moment the creature in the river yelled in a very high pitched voice like a rabbit... "A snake just bit me!" The others pulled him out of the water and carried him toward the campsite. John slowly and silently sank back under water and tapped Gene to stay under. They were under for 30 minutes, and then John rose up again for another look. Over near the campsite he saw a light. It seemed to be on top of a large disk shaped object. Inside the white light he could see colors phasing like slowly cutting through the colors of a rainbow. The ground all around the area was lighting up like they were searching for them. John sunk under the water again and patted Gene to stay down. A little while later they heard a loud whirring sound. John poked his head out of the water and saw the huge disk going up above their heads and moving off toward the north east in the direction of the Chinati Mountains. A little town called Marfa was on the other side of the mountains." [*\(It's the rabbit men\)*](#)

"To be safe, they stayed put underwater until sunrise. Then they slowly made their way to the campsite carefully looking every direction as they walked. On the hood of the John's truck was a shiny silver disk about four inches in diameter. John picked it up and a recording started to play. "We missed you last night. But we will avenge you killing one of our own. We're going to get you and kill you and eat you like you did our brother. And beware, we've been teaching our brothers how to defend themselves. (*killer rabbits*) Gene said "Let's shoot that thing. It could be a beacon you just activated. Shoot it!" They did but the bullets didn't even dent it. "Throw it in the water. Now!" They got in the truck and sped down to the river and threw it in the water waiting to make sure it sank. After a few moments it exploded but the water dampened most of the explosion. The truck rocked fiercely but Gene and John were ok."

"They sped out of that place as fast as they could. As they were leaving they came upon the dead mountain lion hanging from an ancient fence post. Most of its meat had been ripped from its body leaving only the head, legs, and skin. A small piece of smooth animal hide was nailed to the carcass. On it was written these words. "You're already dead. It's only a matter of time." Then the mountain lion came alive like a zombie and grabbed the post he was hanging from. He got off and ran away. Only legs, head, and skin running away. ...(*pause*)... It's been over forty years since that day, and as far as I know, Gene and John are still looking behind them expecting at any moment to have their chest ripped open and eaten by a rabbit man.Kids..... Look over there behind the trees. It looks like something's moving in the shadows. I wonder if rabbit men come this far north. **Loook!**" Then the girls started screaming. Lupe jumps in her dad's lap holding on for dear life. Norma's three girls run up to Norma all trying to get in her lap. Travis looked at Laurie and asked "are there really rabbit men, mom". "No honey, it's biologically impossible. But you never know." Travis didn't say another word but edged his chair closer to his mom."

"Did you kids like the story?" asked Tony. Connie asked Tony if it was true. "Connie, my dad told me that story. He planned to go with Gene and John but his mom said no because it was too dangerous." "That's a very smart momma," said little Nellie, as she was glued to Norma, "I'm glad I don't live in the desert. There are lizards and snakes and coyotes and mountain lions and if they don't get you the rabbit men from outer space will."

"We've had a long day" said Norma. "Its 10:30 and we should head in for the night. We're scheduled to leave on the shuttle at 9:30. We'll see you then. Have a good night." "Ok, you too." That night Connie made sure her sisters understood the story was make-believe so they wouldn't keep her up all night.

[First visit to the Museum](#)

The next morning Norma and her crew finally made it down stairs at twenty minutes after nine. There were some freshly made still warm apple turnovers on a table near the entrance along with little cartons of cold chocolate milk and steamy cups of hot coffee. They grabbed some and walked over to the shuttle. "Are you Ms. Corona?" asked the bus driver as he was looking at his list. "Good. Now we have everybody." This morning like every morning the bus was full of fifty-five excited passengers ready to have some fun. "Make sure your seatbelts are buckled." The driver checked everybody including the little ones in car seats. "Since the Big Change, I don't have to hurry anymore. My job now is to make sure you're safe. So relax and enjoy the

ride. Depending on the traffic, we should be there in about 30 minutes." Thirty minutes later, as the driver exited the freeway, the Big Change Monument and Museum slowly came into view. As Sophia got her first glimpse she said "Mom, this place is humongous. No wonder they said it would take 3 or 4 days to see it all." She was right. It covers two square miles including the parking area and land set aside for future development. There are several very large buildings connected by breezeways with heavy glass panels that slide shut in bad weather. Everywhere you looked there were small electric cars pulling a string of little trailers with seats quickly and efficiently shuttling people all around the park. At the entrance to the park was a massive gigantic cut stone arch. It is similar to the [Arc de Triomphe](#) on the Avenue des Champs-Élysées in Paris, but much bigger. The large keystones at the top of the arch have the word **CARING** carved deeply into them. In massive metal letters across the top of the arch was one word flanked on both sides by a giant American flag. That massive word was **FREEDOM**. Except for the little ones, the bus fell silent as they passed underneath. The driver said it's interesting. When he passes under the "American Arch of Freedom", his passengers either get very quiet or they yell in celebration. In a minute the driver pulled up to the first building. "Ok, please watch your step as you exit the bus. Starting at 6pm we'll have a marked shuttle bus here at this spot every hour until one in the morning to take you back to the Bed and Breakfast. Enjoy." As Connie got off she noticed on the left was a very large mural. It was Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. standing in front of the Lincoln Memorial giving his "I have a dream" speech. Carved into a large piece of marble was *"And when this happens, when we allow freedom to ring, when we let it ring from every village and every hamlet, from every state and every city, we will be able to speed up that day when all of God's children, black men and white men, Jews and Gentiles, Protestants and Catholics, will be able to join hands and sing in the words of the old Negro spiritual, "Free at last! free at last! thank God Almighty, we are free at last!"* It was one of many symbols throughout the museum, some as warnings, and some of celebration. Connie said to her mom "I read and we talked about Dr. King in school this year. He was one of the greatest men of the 20th century." Norma said "That's right, baby. If it wasn't for him you'd have to go to a different school with only brown skinned kids like yourself and lousy teachers, and we'd have to live in lower quality neighborhoods, and you wouldn't be able to eat at nice places, or go to expensive fun vacation spots, or drive nice cars." Connie squinted her eyes, scrunched up her face, and blurted a cynical laugh and said "Mom..... wasn't it that way for us before the Big Change?" Norma stopped and thought for a second and admitted "No kidding..... it was." She continued "But before Dr. King, it was a lot worse." Then she hugged Connie and said "Come on, let's go see this wonderful place."

When Lupe and Tony got off the bus, she immediately went over to large mural of a child. At the bottom was inscribed "**Never Forget little Millie (Jun 23, 2007 - Dec 24, 2013)**". It was an image of a little Black child holding her tired mother's hand on a frigid snowy night in Chicago looking in a restaurant window where everybody inside was warm, nicely dressed and having fun, oblivious to the [souls freezing outside](#). There was a small narrative below the mural that followed *"Those people at that table are drinking some hot chocolate. It must taste really good." Then she feels her mother pull her hand as she looks up at her tired empty eyes telling her that they have to keep moving to the shelter before it fills up or they will have to sleep in a subway bathroom or under a bridge.* "Papi, I'm glad they put that up there. Being homeless is the worst crime people can do to other people. I hope that stays there forever! On Christmas Eve, 2013 we were homeless too, papi. What if we had been living in Chicago. The cold could

have killed us like it did little Millie." Tony said "It's by the grace of God that nobody is homeless anymore." Well that's probably true about the grace part, papi, but God didn't do anything. It took the People to **actually fix it!**"

Along the sidewalk was another mural. It was [Ayaan Hirsi Ali](#) who was crouched down behind a dumpster in New York City hiding from radical Muslim extremists who were trying to kill her for [speaking out](#) about the evils of Islam against women. Below the mural were her words, "**I left the world of faith, of genital cutting and forced marriage for the world of reason and emancipation. After making this voyage I know that one of these two worlds is simply better than the other. Not for its gaudy gadgetry, but for its fundamental values.**"

Near the entrance to building one was another mural. This one was of Edward Snowden and below it was written, "**Every person remembers some moment in their life where they witnessed some injustice, big or small, and looked away, because the consequences of intervening seemed too intimidating, but there's a limit to the amount of incivility and inequality and inhumanity that each individual can tolerate. I crossed that line. And I'm no longer alone.**" As Laurie was reading it she called Travis over and said "Travis, this hero was among those who started the ball rolling to have the Big Change. Remember his words, son."

Laurie said to Tony and Norma "You guys have your own things you want to concentrate on, so what do you say we meet at the Freedom train restaurant around two. See its right here on the map." They all agreed and split up to take it all in.

The Museum has different buildings with different sections. The first building is the financial holocaust section. It is the smallest of all the buildings because the People didn't want to emphasize the past. We just never wanted to forget it. This building gave examples of the effects of the ruthless form of capitalism we had before the Big Change. Instead of devoting exhibits explaining the wrongs of capitalism, it gave example after example of the people who did the hurting and those who were hurt. An example is this story about some ultra-rich college boys. It follows:

We can sometimes look at life through snapshots. Freeze time in a picture and see the thousand words it represents. Look...here's a photograph that might interest you. This one was taken looking at the busy campus of Yale University. It's mostly brilliant children of very wealthy parents who attend this school along with the compulsory token number of minorities/poor kids to satisfy the do gooders and legal eagles who are always on the prowl to file discrimination lawsuits. Here is an interesting photograph. It's a photo of a bunch of spoiled rich boys and girls (18 to 21 years of age) late at night having a little fun drinking and dancing at one of their social houses.

Look. See. Thurmond is one of the partiers in the photograph. He's from a very wealthy family in New York City. His buddies James and Johnny are next to him. The group is laughing and pointing at Thurmond throwing up on his date. They think it's a real hoot because she is a nobody who Thurmond brought so he could have a little fun later that night. Her name is Connie

Terán. With a 4.0 GPA and a perfect score on her SAT, she received a full academic scholarship to Yale. She's from a poor Hispanic family in Brownsville, Texas. Connie is majoring in sociology and political science. After graduation she wants to go back home and do something to benefit her community. But like many who don't understand that the ultra-rich aren't any different than anybody else, Connie was star struck with the smart and handsomely dashing and wealthy young man named Thurmond. After a good laugh by the crowd seeing Connie drenched in alcohol vomit, Thurmond quickly apologized to Connie. He asked her to his apartment right next door where she could shower off and change clothes. Connie innocently and stupidly agreed. Thurmond had Johnny get from his girlfriend a nice clean dress for Connie to change into. After the shower Thurmond profusely apologized again. He said his friends were a bad influence on him. Then he sat on the bed next to her and proceeded to fondle her through the clean dress. She told him to stop, but he didn't. She was crying out while he forced himself on her. His friend Johnny was holding her down. Johnny did her too. He slapped her hard several times to see her scream and hear her beg. Wow, it was like heaven taking a worthless good for nothing screaming Mexican bitch. What a high! After they were finished, Thurmond looked over at Connie sobbing and he said "Hey wetback, it's time for you to go. Go back to the chile fields where you came from. We're finished with you. Get out!"

Yale has continually asked the students to go to officials at the school first before calling the police. In the spirit of that, early the next morning Connie went to a school staff member named Hortence. Connie told her that she was raped by Thurmond and Johnny. Hortence listened to everything with interest. She told Connie that she needed proof. Connie pointed to the bruises on her face and she wanted to have a rape test where they would take a sample of what's inside her. Then they would find Thurmond's and Johnny's DNA. Hortence said "That may be true, but do you have any witnesses that would say you were raped? "Thurmond and Johnny would say it was consensual sex." Hortence said "Students are having rough consensual sex every night." "And just because you say it was rape doesn't make it so." Hortence continued "Thurmond and Johnny come from very wealthy and well respected families in New York City. If you file criminal charges they would be dropped because there's no evidence of rape. And if you sued for damages, the family attorneys would probably win and in the process make sure you would have no real future. Thurmond's family would have you followed for years and create problems for you such that you could never imagine. Paying attorneys a million dollars to ruin your life would be chump change for them." Hortence said "It would be best to chalk it up as a learning experience. But it would still be a good idea to be tested for HIV in a few weeks and I recommend you take a morning after pill right now. The school will pay for it." Connie didn't know that Hortence was ordered by her wealthy benefactors to encourage all rape victims to take an abortion pill to alleviate any future messy problems with bastard children and forced child support payments. Connie came from a very religious Catholic family so she kept the entire nightmare to herself.

This story like many of the stories cemented the understanding that everything in our country including our schools, our healthcare, and our legal system had built into it discrimination that favored the rich. You needed lots of money to receive a quality college education. If you had no health insurance, the emergency room was your only choice. But without any preventative care, by then it was usually too late. Good lawyers required lots of money. If you didn't have a good attorney, chances are you would go to jail. Little rich boys with lots of money got the best

educations. They got the best healthcare in the country. And they could do just about anything they wanted and get away with it. These people actually believed they owned us. And for many, they did. Example after example showed the ultra-wealthy as being ruthless godless monsters with absolutely no social conscience.

Another example in the financial holocaust section was an exhibit showing Americans who had become overweight and had diabetes and cancer and heart attacks all because of eating [tainted](#) processed foods. There were looping videos of terminally ill people begging us to make the Big Change happen. It was too late for them, but not for their children and grandchildren.

The second much larger building is divided into two parts, the Peoples' Direct Governance Hall and the Exercise Room. The governance hall is a holy room, a quiet solemn sacred place where visitors can sit in solitude and contemplate the significance of our new government. And if they want, they can light a small candle and thank God or whatever power they believe in for the good things they now have because of the Big Change. The Exercise Room is a massive room off from the direct governance hall with private cubicles for people to exercise their newfound rights of self-governance. They can type in what they feel are important issues requiring resolution. Many people come in and upload the complete text of a recommended law they authored for consideration. At the beginning of the month the visitors can vote on issues before the people. During the month the visitors can research issues coming up for vote. Even though the people can exercise their rights anywhere, it's extra special when you're surrounded by the physical representation of the great power of the People.

The third building is the Control Room. It's a gigantic room that has small electronic photos of every voting citizen in America. Visitors can use a phone app to direct them to their own photo. When they're next to it, they can press an icon on the phone and their picture enlarges to a 12" image for 10 seconds. Except for the light from the images on both sides of about 65 panels, each stretching 450 feet, the room is kept dark. Random screen images also periodically appear on the perimeter walls displaying an American(s) and the law they recommended that the People embraced to further improve our way of life. The ceiling looks like the night sky with tiny blue dots for stars. The Control Room is one of the most popular places at the museum. In fact, it's one of the most popular places on earth. But even though the control room is massive in size, for safety sake it can only accommodate 4000 visitors at a time. And, they can only stay for 20 minutes.

The fourth building located to the side of the Control Room was just recently completed. It's called the Humanity Room. The People called it that because it uses technology to bring us all together as one people, one humanity. It's like the Control Room, but instead of having images of voting citizens, it has about ten thousand twenty-four inch screens on both sides of 30 four hundred foot long partitions. This building is also 600 feet square. The interior is kept in subdued light.

The concept this room represents is a technology that goes back to the 1980s. It picked up speed in 2009. Then Google researchers took the proven theories and ran with them. Two years ago Google's Larry Page sent a text to all US citizens to showcase the current technology. One of Google's subsidiaries had just achieved the ability to bypass all firewalls, jamming equipment,

and all other restrictions placed by other countries to subjugate its people. Larry suggested we offer a free and open internet to all countries around the world. Current movies and TV shows would be available to anybody anywhere on earth. America could also have channels to show the lifestyles and culture in America and how we got to this point of being a free People.

Larry demonstrated that we can offer complete internet access to everybody on earth for Skype and other video communication programs as well as YouTube, and all social sites like Facebook, and anything else the imagination can create for use on the internet. In other words a completely free and open worldwide internet.

Google had created two ways to communicate. First, is the "one-way" communication system for watching programs using a WIFI device. It would start with signals sent by a massive underground facility located in the US. The communication system creates pulsed neutrinos and amplifies and modulates them to give a distinctive and identifiable character or flavor so WIFI receivers all over the world can read the transmission. Unlike the limitations of open air wave transmission technology used today, neutrinos can freely pass through the earth without any problem. In other words the People of the US can in effect broadcast a signal straight into anybody's WIFI enabled computer or cell phone anywhere on earth.

But the individuals who receive the signal can't broadcast back using the neutrino technology. So another sister system had to be installed that would allow a two way form of communication. Google helped lead the process of stationing satellites across the earth to form a communications grid to receive and broadcast the discrete very low power (DVLP) cell phone transmissions. And the cellphones could be used as mobile WIFIs for laptops and tablets. The neutrino system of broadcasting and the satellite two way communication grid cannot be disrupted by anything anywhere on earth. If you want to watch a movie, the neutrino transmission enables that. If you want to use the interactive internet then the satellite grid does the job. People are mostly using Skype to talk now because it utilizes voice over internet protocol (VOIP) for conversations using a cell phone and there is no jamming device that can defeat it. And the satellites have their own very powerful cold fusion propulsion system. If a country sends missiles to take out satellites, they will be detected and the satellites will cloak themselves and jump into deep outer space to avoid destruction. They also have photon and laser deflector shields.

Getting back to the stuff in the Humanity Room. A year and a half ago, the People of the US sent a message to parts of the earth that had the satellite grid up and running. The message, in their native language, simply stated "Greetings from the People of the United States. We placed an application in your cell phones and on your computers. It's called "Let's Talk". Just touch the "Let's Talk" icon and you can have access to a list of over 100 thousand people here living in the US who would like to communicate with you. Let's talk. We have a lot to learn from each other. We want to share our lives with you. As a present we have given you a free and open internet and free cell phone use. A file is attached that explains everything like all the movies and videos you can now access for free. We don't want to force anything on anybody so if you want to use it just press the blue icon on your screen. Otherwise just ignore this message. At any time in the future you can bring this app up and start it. Thank you and God Bless."

Since that time there has been an ongoing explosion of video conversations across the world. Facebook is used as a means for people to introduce themselves. Mark Zuckerberg, the founder of Facebook created a real nifty instantaneous language translator for both text and voice. Microsoft already had that with Skype, but it was slow and it didn't pick up very well on colloquialisms and slang. Mark's was fantastic because his program was totally immersed in all local ways of talking all across the earth. On top of that it takes samples of the person's voice and then instantly reproduces the exact sound of their voice in the translator. No more robot sounding voices. Back in the 60s the TV show Star Trek had something called a "Universal Translator". And now a little over fifty years later it has become a reality. And wow, what a difference it's made. The ten thousand screens in the Humanity room show real time conversations all over the world. In other words a twenty year old girl in Moscow can have a three way call with a girl in China and another girl in the US. And they don't have to know the other's languages. And they can say absolutely anything they want without the fear of repercussive reprisal from their country's leaders. But, the communicators must give their permission for the Peoples Museum to capture the transmission and proudly display it in the Humanity Room. You'd be surprised how many want to show the visitors at the museum that we are becoming a close community of connected people from all over the world. All cell phones and other types of video recorders are disabled in the humanity room so the communicating parties will maintain their privacy. And the parties are told not to disclose who they are or their specific location.

There used to be a White House Situation Room located in the basement of the West Wing. It was an intelligence management center for our country's rulers. It was run by the National Security Council staff for the use of the President of the United States and his advisors (*including the pathetic joke of a National Security Advisor named Susan Rice, and a great hero of the People named Jeh Johnson who was and continues to be the Deputy for Homeland Security, and the slimy little lackey named Denis McDonough who was the White House Chief of Staff*) to monitor and deal with crises at home and abroad and to conduct secure communications with outside (*often overseas*) persons. The Situation Room was equipped with secure advanced communications equipment for the President to maintain command and control of U.S. forces around the world.

Everything is different now. The far end of the Humanity Room is what one would call the People's representation of the Situation Room. Of course in times of crisis all citizens can immediately find out what is going on through their laptops and cell phones. But there is one very major difference in the way we handle foreign relation problems. We don't use secure communications. We directly contact the people in a country if their ruler is being aggressive and may be trying to make a land grab from another country like Putin did with Croatia. If the Croatia problem was happening right now, we would inform all the Russian people and all the Croatians about what Putin was up to. Then we would ask the Croatians if they wanted to be part of Russia. If the answer was yes, then we would leave them alone. If they said no, then we would have to have some long conversations directly with and would deal directly with the People of Russia. They would have to realize that as far as we are concerned the "rulers" like Putin are no longer running the show. As much as possible on both sides the People would be the decision makers.

Google's neutrino generators, the satellite grid, and the instant voice and text translators allow constructive talk and decision making between the Peoples. It's very doubtful, but if we have to

confront and possibly attempt to discipline a group of people defined by political lines or religious affiliation we will openly talk to them every step of the way. Frankly, the only peoples on earth where I believe this may happen are with the *extremists* of Islam. The Chinese, Russians, Europeans, Black Africans, Australians, Pacific Rim nations, and those in Latin America, in fact all non-Muslims are all wonderful caring people. Even the subjugated Muslim women are very caring. The real pernicious cancer on earth is the dominating Islamic male who tries to use his faith as a tool to control and enslave everybody else including his wife (wives) and children.

The fourth building is the Recognition Building. This place recognizes those who started the movement and those who were instrumental in its success. You can see the events as they unfolded. From the visionaries waking peoples' minds to the possible, to the "boots on the ground" daily workers making sure it happened. You can trace the first groups of candidates on the Big Change ticket and how they won by landslides. It shows the insidious workings of the ultra-rich trying to extinguish the flames of Change. The visitors can see how the President tried to declare Martial Law by restricting all movement and communications of Americans in a desperate attempt to squelch the inevitable. Jeh Johnson a highly respected attorney who was the director of Homeland Security saw that mostly everything the Big Change movement was doing as legal and above board. In fact when the people were rioting it was in retaliation to horrendous acts committed by their own government. He refused to use force against the People. The military also refused. The Supreme Court held the President and Congress in contempt for their actions. Soon thereafter as a shortcut to the planned state by state Constitutional amendment process, the Supreme Court authorized a special general election. The citizens of America voted. The People's Constitutional amendment was adopted and a new direct government was formed.

After the election, top leaders in the computer and software industry, hugely successful entrepreneurs, and socially conscious heroes stepped forward to lend the People a hand to make it all happen, and to make sure no fraud occurred. Such people as Bill Gates, Larry Page, Serge Brin, Larry Ellison, Marissa Mayer, Mark Zuckerberg, Jeff Bezos, Evan Williams, Biz Stone, Philippe Kahn, Alan Emtage, Tim Berners-Lee, Marc Andreessen, Mark P. McCahill, Elon Musk, Jeffery W. Yabuki, Edward Snowden, William Binney, Russell Tice, and Thomas Drake are enshrined forever as heroes in the halls of this building. This section also recognizes the contributions of people in all industries and services who went out of their way to logistically make it all work.

But, in the back there is a special area called the Hall of Shame. Not surprisingly when the Big Change first occurred, the major owners and top management of many corporate giants balked. Some of those who tried to figure a way out were General Electric, Chrysler (*mostly Arab Muslim owned*), GM, Wal-Mart, Exxon Mobile, Apple, IBM, United Health Group, Archer Daniels Midland, Monsanto, Boeing, Johnson & Johnson, Pfizer, United Technologies, Halliburton, Dell, Dow Chemical, Merck, Lockheed Martin, Cisco Systems, DuPont, and many, many more. Jeh Johnson with Homeland Security froze all their money. And he froze their merchandise and equipment destined to escape the country. And something happened that the controlling owners didn't count on. The employees turned against them. *The giant herd trampled the few coyotes.* Most of the upper management employees on down in these companies sided with the People because they knew their company would continue and thrive with all employees being paid very

good tax free income. In fact large companies like General Electric and Apple had already splintered their operations across the world as a means to protect against a possible event like the Big Change. But the People simply identified hundreds of thousands of critical employees across the earth, offered them a wonderful life in America, and most of them took it.

But many American companies with manufacturing operations outside the US refused to move operations to the US. These management individuals including those already out of the country were located and brought justice in the US. These bad men and women were immediately put to work doing hard physical labor mostly hoeing weeds on prison farm labor camps. Now their pictures are permanently posted in the hall as the worst Americans in history. Kids started calling it the "Shame shame on you" area. All of this and much more is kept for future generations to see.

The fifth is a building complex called the Betterments section. This section showcases some of the good things the Big Change has brought about. There are areas such as employment, health, legal system and prisons, food and agriculture, environment and wildlife, science and technology, education, energy, American security, national resources, parks and recreation, human rights and quality of life, Big Change protection, transportation, border control, foreign affairs, money and banking, entrepreneurship and business formation, human habitat, information resources, consumption management, and repatriation of manufacturing.

It's been less than three years since the Big Change but much of the improvements were voted in almost overnight. Apparently, most of us already knew what changes we wanted. We just needed people to formally submit the myriad of mandates in an organized documented fashion so we could review and vote on them to be part of the Big Change amendment to the Constitution. For example we included a museum in the amendment. So the ground breaking for the Big Change Monument and Museum occurred three months into this exciting moment in human history. The contents and complete layout were to be decided later. We first and foremost wanted it to be a gigantic complex of happiness, celebration, recognition, and remembrance.

The next building is the amusement park. It's three times higher than the Mall of America in Minnesota. The building covers 240 acres. There are ten narrow gauge trains constantly running through the park for fast, efficient movement of visitors. And, outside every evening near closing time there's a 30 minute fireworks display the visitors can see up through the glass ceiling in the amusement park. Just before the fireworks display, there is a 3D holographic show below the ceiling displaying many wonders of nature to music.

[The Betterments Building](#)

After the group split up to take in the museum, Norma and her crew went to the Betterments complex. As they passed through the entrance doors they entered a very large pyramid shaped glass building that measured 500 feet by 500 feet at the base. The center point was 433 feet high. The 5.7 acre atrium was like a beautiful tropical rainforest. Along one wall were revolving doors that took visitors into the Betterments building.

As Sophia entered the giant glass pyramid she felt the rarified elixir of cool fresh air hitting her face. She deeply breathed in the pure air. It was intoxicating. As she looked around she said

"Mom, this is like paradise. Is this what heaven is supposed to be like?" "Maybe." said Norma, "Look up there on that tree branch. I see a [toucan](#)." Then little Nellie excitedly shows Connie some beautifully colored [frogs](#) and little [turtles](#) sunning themselves on some rocks. Norma remarked "Kids, there's little animals all around us. The sign here says this is called The [Biosphere](#). It reads... This biosphere is to remind us that nothing else matters unless we have a healthy earth. Our environment and all life on earth are too precious to ignore. We must keep the earth healthy for ourselves and for future generations. This ecosystem has the proper minerals, climate, soil, water, sunlight, air, and all other required ingredients to sustain healthy life. Genetically modified plants and harmful chemical herbicides and insecticides have no place in a healthy environment. Our land, air, and water must be pollution free. Because of the Big Change we no longer have the pressures of profit making, and have returned to environmentally friendly agriculture and industrialization. We are again becoming one with nature." *(Because of the high volume of traffic to and from the Betterments exhibits there is machinery in place to assist in keeping the air and water clean and representative of how our environment should be.)*

Nellie said "Mom, it looks like over there is the place where we can feed the birds. Let's go feed them, ok?" Norma smiled at Nellie and said "You've looked forward to doing this. But remember yesterday we agreed to do it tomorrow so we can spend as much time as you want in the aviary section of this giant biosphere. We're going to be coming back here three more days." Nellie grinned and said "I'll be able to stay here as long as I want, right?" "Sure, baby." "Great! And let's don't forget the 3d light show at closing."

As Connie was looking at the pamphlet on the Betterments section she said "Mom, over here is the education area. Can we go there?" "Sure, but check if it's ok with your sisters." Connie said "They're down with it, mom. It's through these doors." At the entrance to the education area was a low circular platform. On it was a large lifelike statue of a young girl pulling a red wagon full of boxes marked as observations, curiosity, adventure, imagination, contemplation, wonder, dreams, excitement, inspiration, innovation, creativity, DIVERGENT THINKING, collaboration, risk, play, and lots of hugs. She was standing outside a small schoolhouse with her teacher. There was a sign showing their conversation. "Did you bring everything you need for school?" "Yes ma'am, it's all in the wagon."

Connie looked at the display and said "That cute. Let's look over here at the "Learning & Remembering" exhibit." Upon arriving they saw several lines of about 100 very large booths in total. "Come in and have a seat." said the booth in front of Norma and her kids. Connie said "Ok. Is there room for four?" "Sure, just come on in and have a seat. This is an outstanding example of why we made the Big Change. Money is no longer an impediment. The only restrictions in America now are resources and peoplepower. And the People decided it was very important to mass produce booths like the one you are in today. Please excuse my bad manners for not introducing myself. Hi, my name is Hal, and you are?" "My name is Norma, and this is Connie, and Sophia, and Nellie." "Glad to meet you. As you can tell, most of our interaction can be through voice but if you want there's always a keyboard. And there's a laser pointer for the student to use. This booth is really a six sided display screen. Four sides and the top and bottom. But most of the time the student will only utilize one vertical screen and it can cover the entire wall or any smaller size, or even multiple screens. In addition to flat screens, a student can bring up a three dimensional display. My makers are currently working to allow the user to enter

or have the display completely surround the user in 3D. That's estimated to take another six months before mass production starts. Although, we do have 50 prototypes out on the floor that you can visit."

Connie said "Hal, would you show us a six sided display." "Certainly." Then all the walls, ceiling, and floor light up. "Ok, see that plaque under Connie's feet? It marks the center of the city of Paris. In front of you is Notre Dame Cathedral. I have it displaying in real time." Norma said "This is unbelievable Hal, there are no distortions at all as I'm looking around me. The sky is beautiful, and look at the people walking." Hal then took them to the main lobby of the Louvre in Paris, then to the Orsay, and then the top of the Eifel Tower. "This is amazing, Hal. How come I haven't seen this before?" "Well, Norma, this technology has been in existence for over ten years. It was being kept private by the developer until they could find a way to make it profitable. Currently, one thousand are being produced each day in Milwaukee, with plans to increase production."

"That's amazing," said Norma, "Can you show how this is used as a teaching tool." "Certainly. This device allows a child to have more control over the subject matter and the speed at which they learn. The outstanding full spectrum color graphics and sound quality is an excellent enticement. I can also create smells and instantly change the humidity and temperature to give a more realistic effect. My software is a blend of the attributes of the best teachers. And, instead filling the role of the old style traditional teacher where I tell and the student absorbs, I function more as a guide that caters to the child's every wish. I'm connected to the largest databases on earth. And if a student wants to extend into a complicated or technical subject, my software can instantly scan the data I retrieve and reword the information to bring it to the level of my student so they can understand it. Let's make Connie the student. OK? Hello, Connie. Are you ready for an excursion into the unknown?" "Sure." "Great. Since this is your first time let's find out a little about yourself. Now at this point I would ask a series of questions to get a feel about the person's interests. I can also get a very rough estimation by the responses of how much they already know. I'll give you a quick sampling." During the demonstration Hal asks "Connie, tell me something you like." Connie answers "I love turtles. I've got a terrarium at home with three little turtles. They're so cute." Hal asks "Would you like to know more about Turtles?" Connie says "sure" then Hal fills the screen with all the species of turtles and where they're located on earth.

As he is revealing the information he is constantly asking if she wants to go deeper into a particular area or pull back a little. "Connie has total control of how much detailed information she wants. For example, if Connie chose the eating habits of desert tortoises, she can read about it, and along with that, she can see stills or videos. Or while watching a vid she can just sit back and just listen to me explain it to her. She can stop me at any time and ask me to say it differently so she can understand it better. The speed of going in and out and across the knowledge base is very fast because it's all through vocal exchange. The computer response time is almost instantaneous. On top of all this, I tell jokes and inject other types of humor to have the kids laugh. Believe it or not, people learn better when they're cracking up."

After five minutes, Connie stopped and said "Ok, let me get this straight. With your guidance, I can learn whatever I want and at the speed I want. You can instantly supply me the visuals,

sounds, and written words to get me there. And on top of that you will bend over backwards to do whatever is necessary to make sure I understand. Is that right?" "Hal said "Of course, it's my job." Connie looks at her mom and said "Wow, mom, this is incredible. Do you realize during a typical school day I probably have about an hour of good learning? The rest is just stupidity."

Nellie said "Can I ask a question, Hal?" "Sure, what would you like to know?" "During school, can you let me see and talk to my mom and my abuelitos?" Hal said "Of course I can, but they need to have their computer cam on. Do you miss them when you're at school?" Nellie said "Sometimes. It's good that you know all the answers but I like to hear it from my mom, too." Hal said "That's a very good point. I'm here so you can gather information about the world. But your mom has to be the one to show you the difference between right and wrong, what's good and what's bad." "You see what I'm saying, Nellie?" She responds "Sure, cause I don't want anybody else telling me, especially a machine that strangers built."

Hal said "Norma, for her age Nellie is very perceptive. Keep up the good work with her and your other girls. We are also experimenting with having several students at once in one booth versus only one student. You humans are a very collaborative species and you seem to learn better when you're together in small groups. Thanks for coming by and visiting me. These booths are going to be in every school in the country within a few years. Unlike the past where planned obsolescence was the goal, these booths are designed to have components easily changed out as technology advances. So see you soon in your classrooms. Norma, Connie, Sophia, and Nellie, it was a pleasure meeting you. Bye." The girls didn't want to go but they had to allow others to come in and be amazed.

Next up in the education section was the "hands on" learning center that's going into every school. Norma said "Girls, come here. This looks interesting." They saw all kinds of manufacturing equipment laid out in assembly lines with teens making things. As Norma and the crew were walking into the area a sign read: "Welcome to "How does it work and how is it made" learning center. Reading, writing, and arithmetic used to be the foundation of American education. But now since the Big Change an additional foundational block has been added to our education system. It's the HDIW & HIIM requirement. Before the Big Change, this was given no emphasis whatsoever. For example, everybody knows how to operate a cell phone, but only a few people know how it works and how to build one. It's now mandated that every person above 14 years of age learn exactly how to make at least five items being used in our country. From cell phones, to tires, to generators, to jeans, etc. This way the power to make rests with the People and not in facilities in foreign countries behind closed doors. Awareness and understanding is essential for a productive self-sustaining people."

"This is very cool girls," said Norma, "Look over here at the line that makes women's shoes." "Mom, I like these red high heels with the sparkles." said Sophia. "Three inch heels are a little much for you, baby. How about these pink runners?" Sophia looked at all the workstations necessary to make a pair of running shoes. "Mom, I didn't realize there was so much involved in making a pair of shoes. It's nice that machines do most of the work. But I'd like to know how these machines are made." Norma said "Here are some posters behind each machine explaining how the machine is made. It shows students performing each step at small foundries, metal forming machine shops, and plastic mold injection machine shops located on college campuses."

And look over here. It's a 7' by 7' glass box with a laser cutter inside that can make anything out of metal. And over here is a construction line for a 3D printer. It says every home garage will have one of these printers. The maximum size of the plastic items made will be 6' by 6'. Just download the design you want like a kitchen cabinet and in a little while you have it."

Connie said "Mom, they call this a clean room where they fabricate integrated circuits. Wow, this is really interesting. It says almost everything you see today has computer chips. The complete process of learning how to make the machines and learning the programming of the machines that make circuit boards takes about a year. But it's the most sought after skill today."

Next to the integrated circuits exhibit is the programming exhibit. Connie reads the poster to her mom, "This says computer programming is the most important manufacturing process today. Computer chips are like gigantic cities, but it's the programmer that fills the city with all the cars and trucks and people who are given instructions and tasks to follow. Students in every school in America will be taught computer programming as a second language from kindergarten to college senior level and beyond." As Norma is reading the poster she said "it looks like the most popular programs kids are writing today is what they are calling the "interactive voice recognition and interpretative interface" where I can tell the computer what I want as an end result and it will guide me through the design process to arrive at the final product. It's like having a buddy next to you helping you write the programs."

Sophia was listening and said "Connie likes computers and programming and that's nice but I'm just not into that stuff. Mom, I know you and Connie like to design clothes too, but I'd rather learn how to make shoes and jeans and blouses. Oh, and bracelets and necklaces." Connie said "I guess computer programming and making tires and shock absorbers are out, huh Sophia?" "You got that right. Can we go somewhere else that's more interesting? Mom, how about it?" "Ok, honey. Why don't we go to the alternative energy exhibit?" Then Norma points over in that direction. Connie sees some very handsome boys her age heading that way. "Mom, let's go. I can't wait. No, seriously mom let's go now." Norma not understanding but complying said "Ok, ok, let's go."

The alternative energy exhibit entrance had a big red can of fuel with a big black circle and a diagonal line through it. Behind it was a running diesel pickup inside a sound proof enclosure. The exhaust was vented up through the ceiling. The pipe leading up through the ceiling had several sensors. Screens next to the truck were displaying the types and volume of pollutants being given off by the engine. Then above the sensors was a large box where the actual particulates in the exhaust were captured and dumped into a container for the visitors to see. "Mom, we actually breathe all that ugly stuff?" asked Nellie. "Apparently so." said Norma.

As they walked in the exhibit area, a photovoltaic system was in front of the girls. "Look, mom, the flood light is shining on the panel. And it's powering this computer. Hummm... photovoltaic panels. They're so simple. I didn't know there were that many kinds." Sophia picked up a folding umbrella "This umbrella has a paper thin solar panel on the outside that powers a paper thin computer screen underneath. You can also charge your cell phone with it." Norma said "It says here a PV system will be installed at every home in America. I already

knew that. The places that get lots of sun will no longer require power from any other source. By using things powered by electricity, like electric cars, our air will be much cleaner. Girls, I remember my grandfather telling me when he was a boy in the 1950s traveling on desert roads in Arizona he could see clear blue skies all the way to the horizon. But thirty years later the horizon was grey and smoky."

After looking through the alternative energy exhibit the girls were getting a little restless and hungry. And it was getting close to 2pm so the crew decided to head over the Freedom Train Restaurant for a nice lunch. To exit the Betterments building they had to go through the Biosphere again. As they passed through the revolving door, they were again met with the smell of cool clean fresh air. It was again intoxicating. Mom and the three girls just stood still for a moment. "Mom, this has to be what heaven is like" said Connie.

Just then she saw Lupe and her dad coming into the Biosphere. Lupe said "Hey girl, I didn't know you were here. We were looking at the money and finance part." "Yeah, we were clear on the other side looking at the education stuff," said Connie, "I'm starving. How about you?" "You bet. This flyer has the Freedom Train Restaurant menu. I've been looking at it. Maybe that's why my stomach's growling," said Lupe, "It says they have dishes from sea to shining sea. I love the food from New Mexico. My dad lived in Las Cruces when he was a boy. He cooks the traditional recipes like chile rellenos using New Mexico long green chile. And his Spanish rice is to die for. I saw they have Dona Anna County Chile Rellenos on the menu. See, right here. How about you, Connie?" As Connie is looking over the menu she points to the [Austin City Limits](#) Grilled Filet Mignon. "This looks really good. It says here the meat comes from cattle that were fed only all natural and organic, pesticide and herbicide free grains and grasses. It's grilled over Texas Oak and Mesquite wood. It comes with [elote](#) (*e- (like the first e in Nellie)-low-te*) on the side." "Yum. Sounds delicious," said Lupe. She hands the menu over to her sisters and asks them what they want. Sophia and Nellie wanted the freedom train burger with liberty fries. Nellie said "And, I want ranch dressing to dip my fries into. I **LOVE** ranch dressing."

[Lunch at the Museum](#)

As they leave the Biosphere and enter the breezeway that connects the buildings, one of the hundreds of little shuttles pulls up and stops to let people off. The driver said the shuttle was going to the food courts and restaurants so they hopped on. Sitting with them was Travis and his son. Travis is a farmer/rancher near San Antonio, Texas. He was wearing a big old cowboy hat, blue jeans, lizard skin boots, and a blue and white western shirt with pearl snap-on buttons. Lupe sitting next to him looked up and said "Hey mister, I like your hat. But it should be red so your outfit would be all American red, white, and blue." Travis smiled and said "You're right, but I don't have a red hat."

Lupe asked "You're very large. Are you a real cowboy that rides in the rodeo?" Travis smiled and asked "Why, would you like to be a rodeo rider." Lupe immediately said "Of course, I love horses. How do I get into it? By the way this is my dad, Antonio." Travis shakes Antonio's hand and says "It's a pleasure. My name's Travis Jacobs, but everybody calls me Bubba. And this is my son Austin. We're from Lytle, Texas just southwest of San Antonio." "And I'm Tony Solis and this talkative thing is Lupe." Tony looked down at his little girl and said "So you want to ride horses in a rodeo, huh?" "Papi, I love horses." Bubba's son Austin, who is very big, very

blonde, and very muscular for a 14 year old, gives Lupe a big blue eyed smile and said "But it's a lot of work to keep a horse. You have to feed em, brush em, and medicate em. You have to do stuff to keep them entertained. Even little stuff like a rubber ball to play with. And they need lots of room to run." "I can do that." said Lupe as she was gazing into Austin's eyes. For a moment she almost forgot about horses. "We're going to the Freedom Train Restaurant. Here's the menu." said Lupe. Austin read the menu and then asked his dad if they could go there to eat lunch. "Well, we were going to the food court, but I'll bet this food is better. Ok. Sure."

Lupe looked at Bubba and said "If you don't mind can you tell me more about rodeos." Bubba said "Even though I go to the San Antonio rodeo every year, I haven't been in a rodeo in ten years. But Austin here is 14 and he's just getting into rodeoin, so you should talk to him." "Ok," smiled Lupe, as she looked at his son. Austin winked at her as he smiled back.

After a few minutes they pulled up outside the restaurant. Laurie and her son Travis greeted them. "Hi ya'll, I just got here too." She saw two new people joined the group. "Hi, my name is Laurie Jones and this is my son Travis." "It's a pleasure ma'am. I'm Bubba Jacobs and this is my son Austin." The two boys exchanged Heys. Laurie Jones usually likes other women, but Bubba is so big and sky blue eyed handsome she's considering switching teams.

Norma said "It looks like ten." as she was telling the hostess how many people to seat. The hostess advised "We have a table next to the mechanical bull and another one over there next to the stage and the Lewis and Clark display." Norma said "Where, I don't see it?" "See the podium up on the stage and down below the young Indian princess Sacagawea standing next to Lewis." "Oh yeah, that looks like a better spot for us. The area around the bull looks a little too busy." "Certainly, please follow me this way." As they were seated she passed out the menus and recited the day's specials. "Today's lunch specials are: 1. Red, white, and blue ambrosia, 2. Patriotic fruit pizza, 3. Big Change 6 oz prime rib, 4. The All American sandwich with smoked turkey, lettuce, tomato, asedero cheese, and jalapeño with a side of German fries, 5. American apple pie, 6. Red, white, and blue strawberry shortcake, 7. American girl's peach cobbler. Here's a sheet with today's specials you can pass around."

After the hostess left, Norma leaned back and relaxed. She looked at her group of ten. Then she slowly looked at the people in the restaurant. It was a huge room with a high ceiling that seated several thousand people. She thought to herself how all these people had to pass through that little door over there to get in. It was like a tube of toothpaste with a little opening that controlled the passage of everything. It was like the 535 jerks in the old congress that controlled the passage of all laws that affected millions of Americans in a bad way. "But now it's over. No more pinch points. No more greedy billionaire oppressors. This chair I'm sitting in is mine and everybody else's in America."

She finally felt it and understood. Norma stood up and shouted looking at everybody around her "We did it, we actually did it. This is our country. This is our building." She picked up her chair and held it over her head as she was standing on another chair. Smiling she said, "These are our chairs. This stuff doesn't belong to anybody else. America is ours now. I just want to say..... thank you everybody! Thank you from the bottom of my heart!" Then the people around her slowly started to clap, and some started cheering. After a few minutes the area of at

least several hundred people settled down and got back into enjoying their meal. Every face had a look of joyful pride. As a waitress passed by Norma's group, Connie stopped her and apologized for her mother's outbreak of emotions. The waitress told her "Don't worry about it. It happens at least once every few days on her shift. And if the crowd gets really patriotic the staff passes out hats and whistles and other noise makers to help in the celebration. She said we want our customers to feel and experience that FREEDOM isn't just a concept anymore, it's a reality. It's here. It's now. And we're keeping it. You're on the Freedom Train now! Just look around you. Look at the peoples' faces. Finally we are all having a good life." Connie said "I know. I was just a little embarrassed." The waitress smiled and hugged her. Then she turned to the group and said "Hello, my name is Jenny. I'll be your waitress today. May I take your drink orders now?" Norma said "Me dan una cerveza dos equis." (*I'll take a XX beer.*) "How did you know I understood Spanish?" asked the beautiful tawny skinned Hispanic waitress with a Spanish accent. "Lucky guess." said Norma. The adults ordered beer or ice tea, and the kids ordered either icy cold chocolate milk or fizzy coke with all natural sweeteners. As the waitress was leaving to get the drink orders she stopped, turned around and said "You probably already know, but I'm supposed to tell you that everything you eat and drink is GMO free, hormone free, pesticide and herbicide free. Companies like Monsanto, Cargill, and ADM who were poisoning us with horrible fattening and cancer causing food are now owned by the employees who are dedicated to providing us with the best food possible. Everything served is all natural, clean, and good for your health. And the best part... it's delicious! And please let me know if any of you have any food allergies. Also, if you have any religious requirements concerning your meal, please tell me. Thanks."

After hearing the waitress talk about how tainted our food used to be, Laurie said "I need to spend a little time in the betterments building looking at how our food in the past had been sullied and made unfit for human consumption. I had heard it was bad before the "Big Change", but I didn't realize how bad. Tony said, "No kidding. Years ago, my cousins working in California used to pick grapes. They would get rashes on their arms from picking all day. It came from the pesticides sprayed on the grapes. And the crop dusters used to fly low over the bracero huts. It made one of my nieces very sick. But all crop dusting has been stopped and the poisons were destroyed. Thank God. I heard a bunch of those wealthy California vineyard owners who never worked a hard day in their life were put to work in the vineyards pruning vines, hoeing weeds, and picking grapes. Justice...finally."

After a few minutes, Jenny came back with a helper as they passed out the drinks. After seeing everybody had a drink in their hand, Norma stood up to make a toast. "To the Big Change and to all the wonderful things we've given ourselves." They clanked their bottles and glasses and drank. Then a woman from a table behind Norma stood up and said in a Chinese accent "I'd like to give a toast too. To the people of America who are the shining beacon of freedom for the rest of the world. May my people of China soon become free too." "You damn right, said Norma. Freedom is contagious. God bless the people of America and China." All the people around them started clapping. Norma hugged the little Chinese lady and quietly said she hoped it would happen soon for her People too. "My name is Norma Corona, and yours is?" "It is Ziyóu. (*Sue ee yo*) It means freedom." Surprised, Norma said "Maybe the universe has brought you to this place for a reason. Freedom just doesn't happen." "Yes, I know. I have to make it happen." With a firm countenance Ziyóu looked up at Norma and said "Pray for me and my small group of

freedom mothers." With a worried look Norma hugged her again and said "Good luck and may success be with you, Ziyóu."

In a few minutes the waitress came back to take the food orders. Connie ordered the Austin City Limits grilled filet mignon with elote, and Lupe went with the rellenos, Connie's sisters and Laurie's Travis and Bubba's Austin wanted a burger and fries with ranch dressing. Norma and Laurie ordered a seafood salad. And Tony ordered fresh Colorado trout just flown in that morning. Bubba ordered beef stew with a bowl of grapes and strawberries on the side. In fifteen minutes the food was served. Tony requested that everybody hold hands as he led the group in giving thanks. After an earnest prayer, they all dug in.

Laurie was sitting across from Bubba. "So Bubba, what do you do for a living? You've got a great tan so it must be outside work." He replied "It's just a farmer's tan, Laurie. And that's what I do. My ancestors were Belgian and for many generations we've been vegetable farmers. But I also grow Coastal Bermuda grass for cattle and horses. And, what do you do, Laurie?" Laurie said "I teach biology and political science in high school." "Science and politics, what a combination." said Bubba.

Tony asked "Bubba, see anything interesting this morning?" He said "Man, did I. We went to the agricultural betterment section. I was really worried about the mandate to stop all chemical pesticides and herbicides. Having my crops overrun by weeds and all kinds of little critters was a concern right after the Big Change. But stopping hazardous chemicals was really ok. See companies like Monsanto, you know they were the ones who made agent orange that was used in Vietnam that gave everybody cancer, well Monsanto made Roundup because it was very cheap to make. They had other recipes that were completely natural and biodegradable but they didn't use them because of the higher cost to manufacture. And, like I've read in my trade journals, the pesticide business is anything but dead." Tony said "Oh, really." Bubba said "Yeah, they're doing stuff like using squished bug juice and cactus juice as pesticides. Again, before the Big Change, this approach wasn't used because it was more expensive. These pesticides are completely harmless to humans. Anyway the exhibits validated what I already knew. And, biodegradable herbicides can only be used as an alternative to hoeing weeds and only on a limited basis. See today all I have to do is make a request to my government for people to come out and do hoeing and they send me lots of ex-bankers and ex-stockbrokers to do the job." Tony said "You're kidding. Texas bankers hoeing weeds." "Hahahaha, that's right, Tony. Beautiful justice, isn't it." "Hoddamm right, Bubba." said Tony.

"See anything else in the ag display?" "There was lots of stuff. I think the most impressive thing was the food processing exhibits. Before the Big Change much of the food sold was tainted in one way or another." *(Aside: The next four vids about our tainted food supply are 43 minutes long. They're not necessary for the story. But they're here if you'd like to watch them.)* Now back to the story: "Our hamburger meat was **"pink slime"**. In fact our entire food supply was tainted ([tainted 1](#)) ([tainted 2](#)) ([tainted 3](#)). Our biased paid off news media kept it all a secret so most Americans didn't know. So the food processors for decades were literally getting away with murder. Murder for profits. But all this stopped after the Big Change. The owners and managers of large food processing companies like Monsanto, Cargill, and ADM were convicted of the crime of slow murder through the tainted foods they produced and sold."

"Now the American public is focused on growing and raising great tasting healthy food fit for consumption. The People mandated more fresh produce and less packaged processed foods. And to help make life easier in the kitchen we've invented all kinds of self-cleaning machines to do the cooking at home. For example, if you want a nice chicken or beef stew, there's a machine that takes the vegetables and meat then adds water and spices and cooks it all to perfection. It even "tastes" the stew during the cooking process. I also saw "heat free" grain grinding machines for use in homes. I can go the store and buy 5 pounds of shelled wheat and take it home and grind it up. Then I put the ground wheat in this really cool self-cleaning bread making machine that automatically loads in the yeast, warm water, and other ingredients. It bakes a perfect healthy loaf every time. It's all natural and pesticide free. If you like French fries there's this machine that will take potatoes and automatically clean and peel them. Then it slices the potatoes and bakes them. It even automatically adds spices. It's amazing!" Tony said "I've heard about those kitchen appliances. The best part is they're self-cleaning." Bubba said "That's right. Nobody likes to spend a bunch of needless time in the kitchen cleaning up when you can be doing something else. They even had a machine that made pear, peach, and apple pies. You can clean and core some apples and throw them in a hopper and turn the machine on. Two hours later you open this little door and there's a perfectly baked apple pie." Tony said "Let's see... my favorite food is pizza. Did you see any pizza makers?" "I did. It made 14 inch pizzas from scratch. It was actually two machines... a dough maker and another machine that took the dough and put the ingredients on and then baked it. You can now buy a healthy fat free cheese substitute for your pizza. My dad died from clogged arteries in his heart so I'm careful about eating fatty foods. And believe it or not they have almost finished developing a robot that will cook meals and clean up after itself." Tony smiled and said "Put me on top of that order list!"

"How about you, Tony? What did you see this morning?" Tony said "The first thing we did was go to the direct governance hall, lit a candle and gave thanks. Then we went over to the Control Room. My daughter and I experienced some hard times before the Big Change and we just wanted to record how the Change saved my life and brought us back together."

"Then we went over to the Betterments Building to look at how the Big Change, how the People, took care of our money problems. See, through no fault of my own, I became destitute and child protective services took my daughter away. So I just wanted some reassurance that the Big Change has really taken care of my money problems."

"I can understand your concern, Tony," said Bubba, "I haven't been to that part yet. What did you see?" Tony said "Well, you know everywhere we go in the museum we see symbols. At the entrance to the money betterments section were these actors on a small stage. A monopoly board formed the backdrop. A fat guy in a suit with a cigar in his mouth was sitting at a table counting a fist full of money and laughing. He looked like that character in the monopoly game. Under both his feet were people squirming. They were pleading for just a little more time to make their rent payment. The rich guy was telling them to shut up and pay up. Anyway, the skit went on for about ten minutes. At the end after the Big Change, the squirming tenants now had enough food to eat and decent clothes to wear and they owned their apartments. Now they were having a good time forcing the old slumlord to clean their toilets. It was funny, but I wasn't there to watch a little play. I wanted some reassurances."

Bubba said "It's been a little less than three years. We all know most of the answer." Tony said "That's true. There is zero unemployment. We all have accounts at the Peoples' bank. We get at least \$10,000 deposited to our account every month. There are no more taxes of any kind so the money is tax free. Healthcare and all utilities are free. Major things like homes and cars have had their prices slashed. We can only buy stuff through our account. Access to our account is protected by fingerprints, and eye scans, and a scan through our right hand, and as we touch the fingerprint pad it checks to see that we're alive." Bubba said "So what was it that you wanted to know?" "I wanted to know if there were any catches or exceptions. I wanted to see how fair all this was."

"Well this is something I found out that I didn't know: There are people and computer programs constantly checking to make sure prices don't rise. If a new product comes out then an unbiased group of people assign a fair price to it."

"And I was thinking about being recognized for my contributions at work. I know I have to keep an hourly record of what I do. And I can include any improvements or innovations I was responsible for. But I wanted to know if anybody actually reviewed my work records." Bubba said "I'm sure that's an area many people are sensitive about. Because if they're a mover and a shaker, an innovator or a creator, they want to receive the proper recognition." "Right," said Tony, "And that's where our NSA big brother comes in. Their computer system is the largest on earth. They constantly look at each and every one of us every day, accumulating information that will be used for our next annual evaluation. Other than us maintaining time sheets everything is done in the background. The computer also requires people who work with and around me and people outside the company that I interface with to write a review on me. I already knew that, but it reminded me about the fairness of having many more people involved. The exhibit gave many examples of recognition and added remuneration."

Bubba said "What I'm happy about is it doesn't matter anymore if a business loses money. Money is no longer the score card for success. Since I'm a business owner, that's very important for me to know. Instead of being money profitable I have to be people, resource, and environment profitable. Have you heard about that, Tony?"

Tony said "I think so. We're rewarding businesses that use plentiful instead of scarce materials, or from non-renewable to renewable." "True", said Bubba, "But in my case it's a little different. For example, one of my products is beef. If you feed cows nothing but corn for five months they'll get big fast. But that makes the meat too fatty and it hurts the cow's stomach. Then you have to give the cow antibiotics to heal them because they were eating too much corn. The antibiotics stay in the meat and it hurts us. But if I keep my cattle out in the pasture eating natural grasses the meat is much healthier. It takes them a year or so longer to gain enough weight, but who cares. I don't have to make money profit anymore. I have to make food that's healthy and delicious to eat. And I get rewarded for that."

"That's pretty good," Tony said, "To me, what's most important is I want to have assurances that I continually take in enough money to have a good life. The People hired experts to figure out just what a person needs more or less to have a good life. And it's not just money. It's quality of

life. It's everything. So, every six months they review their past recommendations against real life experiences, again using our wonderful NSA spying computers. If \$10,000 a month isn't enough then they'll recommend raising it, or they will lower prices. And if there isn't enough community support in an area of a person's life, again recommendations are made for improvement. **And, that's exactly what I wanted to see."**

Unusual additions to the group

As the group was just starting to eat, Jenny their waitress walked a man with a scruffy beard wearing a baseball cap over to an empty chair at the end of the table. "We're getting a little crowded in here today. Would you mind another person sitting with your group?" Norma sitting next to the empty chair said "Of course not. Come, sit down and relax. It's 2:30, I'll bet you're hungry." The man, in a low voice, said "Yes. I'm very hungry. And, I've been talking all morning and early afternoon so my mouth is dry." He turned to Jenny and asked if he could have something nice and cold to drink. Maybe one of her special 33 degree Tecates. She said "Of course, sir, I'll bring it right out to you." "Could you bring some cut limes with it, please." As she was walking away she responded "Yes, sir. Right away."

"Hi, my name is Norma Corona and these are my daughters Connie, Sophia, and Nellie." "And my name is Tony Solis and this is my daughter Lupe." "And, I'm Laurie Jones and this is my son Travis." "Everybody calls me Bubba and this is my son Austin". "Hello everybody, my name is Larry." Norma turned to Larry and said "You must work here or something, because the waitress seemed to know you." Larry said "Yes, she's waited on me a few times before. So, Norma, what do you do for a living?" "Well Larry, I used to have a real dead end job working at Wal-Mart. And guess what, I now have a very rewarding job working at Wal-Mart and it's doing the same thing." Larry smiled and said "That \$10,000 a month makes a world of difference, doesn't it." "Larry, you have no idea."

"So what do you do for a living?" asked Norma. Larry thought for a moment how he should say it. Then he said "Well, I work with computer software. Sometimes it gets very tedious but it's been a lot of fun." Norma looked at Connie and said "Connie, Larry over here works with computer software and he says he loves it. You should talk to him. Maybe he could point out some things you should study in school." Norma looked back at Larry and said "My oldest daughter loves computers, but her teachers are kind of mediocre. I think she needs all the help she can get." Larry looked at Connie and said "Well, I'm giving a seminar at 4:00 this afternoon in the Betterments Building at the education center. In the back is a theater. Get there a little early and I'll find a good seat for you. The seminar is for kids like yourself." Connie smiled and said "Ok." Norma said "Thank you, Larry. I'll make sure she's there."

"So have you decided on what to eat?" Larry said he gave the order to the waitress as they were walking to the table. At that moment the waitress walked up to Larry with his drink and said "I see you're talking behind my back again." She put her arm around him, and gave him a big hug and kiss on the cheek. Then she turned to Norma and said "We all take good care of this very nice man every time he comes in." Then Connie jumps in "It looks like you do that for all your customers. The food here is delicious." Then the waitress bends down next to Larry and whispers "They really don't know who you are, do they?" Larry whispers to her "Let's keep it that way. Ok." Norma heard them and whispered "What are you talking about?" Jenny

whispered to Larry, "Can I tell her?" Larry nods his head. Jenny whispered "You're sitting next to the man who founded Google. If it wasn't for Larry the Big Change couldn't have happened." Larry quickly interrupted and softly whispered "The Big Change happened because of the People. I just happened to make a nice search engine." "Yeah, right," whispered Jenny, "and you just happened to put up all those satellites and tons of other stuff." Then she smiled and said "Excuse me for a minute. I need to bring your order." Larry looked at Norma and whispered "Please don't say anything. It's difficult to sit down and have a good meal without interruptions. Is that ok?" Norma reached over and put her hand on his forearm and gently squeezed it. Then as tears were welling up in her eyes she whispered "Thank you for everything. Other than giving birth to my three little munchkins, this has to be the happiest day of my life. I came to see stuff in a building and now God has blessed me by allowing me to touch a man, a real man, who helped make this happen. I won't say anything. Please enjoy your meal." By this time Jenny had returned and was setting his food down. "Buen provecho (*Enjoy your meal*), Larry" smiled Jenny as she left to pick up another order. "Mom, are you ok," asked Sophia. "Of course, I think I just got something in my eye. So, Sophia, is there anything you would like to see this afternoon." "I don't know, mom. Do you know of anything?" Larry said "Sophia, your mom could recommend the "miracles and wizardry of modern science exhibit" in the Betterments building. This morning I was able to stand on a skateboard and make it rise a foot off the floor. They strapped a box to my back that had super powered gyroscopes so I wouldn't fall over. There are all kinds of cool things over there. And it's close to the theater where Connie is going to be." "Does that sound good, baby?" asked Norma. "Sounds good, mom."

The group was midway into their meal when Jenny brought out another round of beers, icy cold chocolate milk, ice teas, and soft drinks. "I got another one for you too Larry," said Norma. "You didn't have to do that." "Of course I had to because everybody in our group has to have something in their hand to drink after a toast is made. And you're now part of our group, Larry. Ok everybody, let's give a toast to our newfound friendships and to one of the best places on earth to be. We used to say "may your lives be long and prosperous". Now we can say "may your lives be long and happy because the People already took care of the prosperous part". To the People!" The rest of the group shouted with various positive responses as they clanked their drinks together, including Larry. "Somehow the beer tastes twice as good after a toast" smiled Tony. "Mom, can I have a sip?" asked Connie. "Sure baby, but just a sip." Connie takes a sip and said "I really don't know what you see in this stuff. It tastes horrible." "Just keep on thinking that, mija."

"That looks really good, Larry. What is it?" asked Norma. "It's a reuben sandwich. I love these things. It's made with corned beef so it has some unnecessary amounts of salt, but it's very good. I brought in some 50lb sacks of rye grain straight from a farm in Nebraska. They grind it in the kitchen to make flower. Some rye breads have wheat mixed in, but this is pure rye. Kind of like pumpernickel." "Pumperwhatel?" asked Norma. "Here have a taste." So he cuts off a small piece at the end of the sandwich and gives it to Norma. "My god this stuff is good."

Then a friend of Larry's also with a scruffy beard and a baseball cap walked up and said "Hey man, that Reuben looks good." Larry responded "Hey Serge, what's happening man." There was an empty chair on the other side of the table from Norma. After making sure no one was sitting there Serge takes a seat. "I was in the area and thought I'd stop by and see how the new

equipment was working out in the Humanity Room. Got the munchies and came over. Just happened to see you eating that delicious sandwich. Did you bring some of your friends with you today?" "Actually, these kind strangers let me sit with them." Larry looked at Norma and said "Please excuse my bad manners, this is Serge. He and I have known each other since we were in college. We were always competitive. So as adults we decided to work together on special projects to see who would be the best. Serge, this is Norma Corona." Norma grinned and asked "So who's the best?" They both repeatedly were saying "I am." So after a minute of tolerating the I-aming, Norma knew Larry wouldn't remember everybody's name at the table so she interrupted the guys and introduced Serge to the rest of the group.

"It's a pleasure to meet you, Serge." smiled Norma. "Same here, Norma. You know, like your last name, my favorite beer is Corona and my throat is really parched." as he saw Jenny coming over. "I see we have a complete set today." as Jenny gave Serge a big hug. She asked "What will be your pleasure, Serge?" Serge winked at her and said "Jenny, you were always good with the leading questions, but I'll just have a Corona with some lime wedges please." Jenny said "And guess what, I remembered the last time, and here comes your favorite drink." as a helper was running the frosty ice cold Corona out to him. "You've got a good memory. Ok, can you look into your crystal ball and tell me what my order is?" "Of course... Larry got you to eat his special Reuben recipe last time and you said you were addicted to it. So guess what?" As she is turning to face the kitchen another helper was running out half of a Reuben sandwich and some tiny grilled falafel. Serge said "Isn't it beautiful. I call it my perfect blend of Sephardic and Ashkenazi. Thanks, Jenny. You really know the way to a man's heart." Norma didn't understand a word of what Serge was saying so she just smiled and nodded. Larry reached over squeezing Norma's arm and said "Don't worry about him, he's just being silly." Then he looked around and asked "Is your husband working today?" Norma blushes a little and said she wasn't married. She quickly went through her bad habit of being attracted to handsome men who say "My heart stops every time I look at you" and "I'm so lucky to have found my one true love", but then they eventually forget and go after younger girls with firmer bodies. She told Larry "But since the Big Change, I've been working out three times a week at the gym and lost all my "had babies weight." But it's hard to find a decent guy these days, really hard since I have three girls. But when I look at it, these girls shine and incredible amount of light into my life. I'm very blessed." Larry was looking deeply into Norma's eyes as she was talking. He saw an honest to God, down to earth good woman who because of her past circumstances had to become street smart and street hardened.

"I'm divorced too. I married her in 2007. As time passed it was apparent she was more interested in her position in life than in the real me." "Well Larry, I assume you had lots of money. You know what they say, "Some women are drawn to money like bees to honey". And they'll say and do anything to get it. And they hide it so well, don't they?" as she was looking directly into Larry's eyes... "If they're beautiful, funny, and smart and get the best degrees and know exactly how to act and the right things to say, it doesn't mean they're a good person." Larry laughed and agreed. Then Norma said "It sounds like you had the perfect wife to display as a trophy but it turned out she had a refrigerator for a heart." Larry laughed again and started with the puppy dog eyes that usually scared Norma away. But this time she felt something.

"Mom. Helloooo. Earth to mom. Come in mom." as Connie was trying to get her attention. "What do you need, baby?" "Can I have some dessert? Can Sophia, Nellie and me share a big slice of apple pie with some vanilla ice cream on the side. The waitress said the pie and ice cream were made this morning and they have all natural organic ingredients, and you like us to eat that kind of stuff, right mom :)." "You don't have to butter me up, mija. Sure, go ahead and order it." She turned back to Larry, smiled and said "Kids, when they get to be Connie's age they start thinking they can manipulate you."

Over near the other end of the table, Laurie was finishing her meal while she was talking up the new attitude at her school. While his mom was praising the new ways of teaching, Travis got up and walked over to Sophia and asked "Hey, while we're waiting for our desserts, you wanna go over and look at the Lewis and Clark display?" "Sure!" As Sophia walked over with Travis she asked "Who is this Indian standing with them?" Travis coyly said, "She's Sacagawea. Isn't she pretty? Her face and hair and green eyes kind of looks like yours." (*Sophia has a tough strong personality who acts and looks like and is about the same age as the most popular kid singer in Columbia named [Shaira Selena](#).*) Sophia blushed and said "Maybe, but I'm much better looking." And she looked straight at Travis, laughing and said "Right, Travis?" That caught Travis off guard so he decided to tone it down a little. Travis said in a restrained voice "Right". Sophia was curious about the display and said "So who was this Sacagawea person." Travis said "She was a Shoshone woman who was kidnapped when she was 12 and sold as a slave to a French Canadian fur trader who took her in as his wife. At 16 she became a guide for the Lewis and Clark expedition. In 1805 she took them all the way to the Pacific Ocean in Washington State. Along the way she was smart enough to keep Lewis and Clark from being killed by Indians. She was paid nothing for her work. But her husband was paid \$500 and given 320 acres of land." Sophia said "It's sad that she lived during a time when Indian women were treated like shit. You know mom says she is full blooded Yavapai Indian from Arizona. She said before the Big Change her White overlords didn't pay her squat either." Travis said it was really cool that her mom is full blooded Indian. Sophia didn't much care about that as much as she liked the idea of a woman leader. Then she looked at Travis and thought out loud, "Maybe someday you can tell me more about Lewis and Clark, Travis." He wondered what she meant because they were only going to be together for week while they were staying at the same bed and breakfast.

After seeing the exhibit, Sophia saw a karaoke machine next to the stage. "Hey Travis, how well can you sing?" "Ok, I guess. Why? What's this thing?" asked Travis. "It's a karaoke machine, silly. Mom takes us to this place where families all sing karaoke. It's lots of fun, Travis. I like Latin dance music and rock from the 80s. This screen shows the words as the music plays. The songs are just the music and you have to be the singer. I've already memorized most of the songs I do." "Interesting," said Travis. "Get your mom to take you to do karaoke sometime. There's a dance floor where we go and the mom's like to teach their kids how to dance. Can you dance the [cumbia](#)? That's my favorite." She was showing him the dance steps as she was humming some music. "No. I don't know how to dance. But on September 1st I'll be starting 6th grade. Only the middle school and the high school have dances where I live. I hear the older kids teach the sixth graders dance moves." Travis remarked "Most of the time I stay home studying and watching movies and playing games on the internet. And I do a little sports." Sophia said "Mom says kids need to get out and be part of life and not just see it in pixels. She thinks I don't know what pixels mean." "You've got a cool mom, Sophia."

By this time the desserts were being served and the kids went back to sit down. "Hey, don't Bogart the ice cream." yelled Nellie. "But it's so good," said Connie, "I can't believe this. The ice cream you buy in stores doesn't taste like this. Mom, can we buy a quart to take to the hotel?" "We'll see. Remind me just before we leave, baby."

During dessert Laurie was still saying good things about the new teaching methods. Bubba said "It's nice you found something you love to do." Then getting a little curious about Laurie, he asked "So Laurie, what do you do for fun in Houston?" "Sometimes we like to go to the Aquarium restaurant to eat and look at the fish. And we'll go to Schlitterbahn, and to Kemah Boardwalk, and Moody Gardens in Galveston, and the Houston Space Center. Houston also has a pretty cool kid's museum. And if Travis nags me enough we'll take a weekend off and go to San Antonio. He loves Sea World and Fiesta Texas." "That's nice but does your date ever take you to a play or a symphony? I hear the Houston symphony is pretty good." Laurie perked up and responded "I don't have a boyfriend right now." Her son said "Yeah... mom can't figure out whether she likes men or women the best. Maybe you help her out with that." Laurie got a little embarrassed and said "Don't worry, I'm not playing on the other team."

Jenny walked up with a microphone and said "Ok guys, you have the best seats in the house for our after lunch big screen video performance, "God Bless America with Song". On their [school trip](#) to our beautiful state of Hawaii is the Harrison High School band from West Lafayette, Indiana. And for our enjoyment here they are at the Hawaii Arizona War Memorial Visitors Center playing [The Stars and Stripes Forever](#), and a great American song loved by the soldiers during WWII is [Stardust](#), and finally our [armed forces songs](#)."

After the applause subsided Jenny thanked everybody for coming to the Freedom Train Restaurant. It was now 3:30 and the restaurant was closing for an hour to clean up and prepare for the dinner crowd.

After lunch the group broke up into several smaller groups. Connie, Lupe, and Austin went to Larry Page's class on "Recent innovations in Hypertext Transfer Protocol" and "Recent breakthroughs in algorithms for atypical human reasoning". Norma, Laurie, Sophia, Nellie, and Travis went to visit the "Miracles and Wizardry of Modern Science" exhibit which is next to the theater where Larry is speaking. Larry persuaded Serge to join him in teaching the class. His expertise on human reasoning algorithms will add to the fun. The home construction exhibit is a short distance from the theater so Tony and Bubba went to scope it out.

"Look mom, no wheels." as Sophia was floating a foot off the ground on a skate board. She was moving her thumb on a device that looked like an iphone. Push the thumb a little forward and she goes forward slowly. A little further forward and the board really moves out. And there are built in safety features that prevent crashing into obstacles. "Mom, look at me. It's like Aladdin's flying carpet." "Yes, honey, that's really amazing." "Can I take one home, mom." Norma said "The sign here says these prototypes have only been out for a month and production will begin later this year." "What's a prototype, mom." "It's the first example of what they are going to make." said Norma. "Wow, I'm on the first of a kind. Weeee! This is fun, mom. I'll stop in a minute and let you try it. Ok?" "That's ok, baby. Let Nellie go next. She's about to pull my arm off asking to ride it." So Nellie took the board from Sophia and said "Ok poser, your style was little sketchy. Let me show you some gnarly moves, big sis." Sophia said "Mom,

I think Nellie's been hanging out with the skater kids next door a little too much." Nellie said "Watch Nellie do a one-eighty..... Wow, this is rad." Nellie rode the board like a kid twice her age. After a few minutes, she turned the board over to Travis. He's been boarding since he could walk and it showed. Sophia was very impressed with his athleticism.

Next to the flying skateboard exhibit was the "fall bounce and spin". A person gets into this huge clear plastic ball. Inside they climb into a spinning device. Then the ball is raised sixty feet into the air and dropped. When it hits the ground the soft ball bounces and the person's inertia created by the fall continues because they initiate a sling movement inside the ball that causes them to spin. After lots of spins they stop. Very dizzy but unhurt. Sophia and Travis loved the ball. But Nellie didn't do it after seeing those two walk around all dizzy after getting out.

The next feature of the science exhibit was the mind reader. Norma said "Oh god, now they're going to be reading our thoughts." Travis said "It says here it's cutting edge polygraph technology. What's a polygraph, mom." Laurie told him it was a machine to see if a person is telling the truth. The device was no bigger than a credit card. Tiny wireless sensors are placed on the wrist and throat and chest and ankle and underneath one nostril. And something that looked like the old Google glass is placed over one eye. The person who was demonstrating the device hooked Nellie up first. He asked "What grade are you in?" "I'll be going into second grade." "Are you having fun." "Maybe." "Do you get along with your sister?" "That depends." "Tell me a secret." "No way, then it wouldn't be a secret." Nellie stood up and said "Whose next? This thing gives me the creeps." Travis went next and answered a series of questions. Then Sophia snuck in a question and asked "Do you think I'm pretty?" The man demonstrating the device said "Yes/no questions don't need a verbal response. Looking at his breathing, heartbeat, pupil movement, chemical content of his respiration, and his skin energy, Travis already told me." Sophia said "Well?" Norma interrupted and said "Sophia, you already know you're pretty. You're just embarrassing Travis. So stop it." "Ok, mom." Then Sophia got hooked up and said "I like Travis because he's smart and he's boss on a skateboard." "Honey, we don't need a polygraph to know that, baby." said Norma. Then Norma turned to Laurie "The next ten years with Sophia is going to be really interesting." They laughed and continued on to the next item in the exhibit.

Because of their popularity, the holograph section has 50 identical prototype exhibits. They are small rooms with one way glass walls. People can see in, but the person inside only sees three dimensional static and moving images in the room. The room is where the occupant can interact with animated holographs. By using laser technology to exactly track the person's movements, similar to a [laser virtual keyboard](#), but using the entire three dimensional human body, a computer controlling the holographs can determine how to interact. The immediate exterior of the holograms have dense super ionic atoms that form a kind of turgor pressure which gives the image the feeling of an actual object when touched by the person. The person in the room can get on a giant holographic bird and pretend to fly it across a forest. It all seems very real especially with fans mimicking the wind. Everybody loved the interactive holograms.

Then there were some things that seemed a little too [esoteric](#) for the kids like synthesized rough endoplasmic reticulum to augment the production of insulin at the islets of Langerhans in the

pancreas. And there was the [MED13](#) modulator that is placed in the heart using a [nanobot](#). The modulator works to assist micro-RNA 208a and MED13 in regulating systemic energy homeostasis. This way the body's metabolism is kept in a better equilibrium when compensating for disrupting changes. Obesity and plaque buildup in arteries can now be stopped. As they walked deeper into the exhibit the more confusing it became. Norma said "I'm sure all of this stuff is nice, but it's a little above my pay grade. So what do you say we head on over to the theater. The class is almost over." Everybody agreed and off they went.

[Lupe is discovered](#)

They had just gotten there when the doors to the theater opened and the kids started coming out. Lupe ran up to her dad and said "Papi, I didn't realize that Larry Page was one of the guys that helped bring about the Big Change. During a break I ran up and hugged him for helping save our family. He was a little embarrassed and didn't know what I was saying. I said its ok, Mr. Page. Sometimes when one person does something it creates a wave that washes over those you never thought about. I was one of those people."

"Lupe, I don't understand." said Tony. "Papi, Larry started Google with that other man who sat next to you at lunch named Serge Brin. The people at Google are the main reason the Big Change was successful." "Ay Dios mio (*OMG*), mija. Today has turned out to be a very good day." "That's right, papi. Larry liked my attitude and he thinks writing software might be in my future."

Connie was walking out of the theater laughing with Mr. Page. "Excuse me, Connie. Do you mind if I speak with Lupe's dad for a minute?" As Tony was walking up, Larry said, "Tony, I didn't know your 13 year old daughter had such an innate understanding of multivariable calculus, differential equations, and linear algebra. Then she started talking about Mandelbrot's fractals and how he needed to see ice crystal formation only in four dimensions which includes time. It's never a snapshot, but a living moving event that's affected by a multitude of outside influences during each infinitely refined slice of time that can if and when understood be factored into the fractal formula. Then she was disputing the theory of pure randomness or even chaos because she believes stochastic approaches are not refined enough and uses the wrong types or by definition limited types of input for probability predictions. Although she believes in determinism, she says our current approach is highly inaccurate because it uses rough history or unrefined points of past reference. Lupe said a determinate could occur a trillionth of a second before the event so it would be almost impossible to make genuine accurate determinations. She compared modern day tools including the math we're using to the Flintstones when we should be like the Jetsons. I didn't know they still showed those old cartoons. Anyway, she said there is something else better to determine events and that is the yet to be understood and measurable fact of fused time/energy. She said we're all keyed into it with our minds, but we ignore it because it's intangible. Lupe said "But it's not intangible, we just don't have instruments to detect it yet. How many times in your life, just out of nowhere, did you feel something was going to happen and it did?" Lupe continued "My daddy taught me that. He even showed me how to relax and clear my mind and then focus on a person in front of me. Then they'll quickly turn around and look at me with a look on their face saying what." Tony said "Yeah, my great grandfather an Indian from Sonora showed me these things. We just don't normally talk about

them like my daughter because the White man doesn't understand." Tony grinned at Larry "Now you think we're a little crazy."

Larry said "Not really..... It sounds like an advanced level of mind control. But it does give me an insight to the source of her incredible abilities." He put his hand on Lupe's shoulder, smiled and continued "Then she started talking about separate program execution processes moving across time that will have a symbiotic relationship together when necessary but not requiring the symbiosis for continuance. The symbiosis contributes to scaling when necessary to address demands of outside influences. This aids the economy of resources and reduces time consumed. Then she looked at me and said..." Lupe interrupted looking at Larry "That's how your algorithms should be." "Tony..... Lupe is a natural for creating four dimensional predictive algorithms.And probably a whole lot more."

Tony was standing there with his mouth open not knowing what the heck Larry was talking about. Tony said "Well I knew she liked math, but apparently she's pretty good at it." Larry responded "Diamonds like Lupe are exactly one of the reasons I pushed to have the Big Change. It has given her the opportunity to spread her wings and fly. We're working right now to give Lupe and other kids the necessary tools to complement their abilities so they can achieve and be the best they can be. Lupe has the mind I always pictured my child would have. As we proceeded during the class, Lupe started asking questions I hadn't even thought about. Then as she was explaining, I had to pay attention so I wouldn't get lost. Her almost instant perception and depth of logic is very rare, Tony. You should be very proud of her." Tony sat down in a chair next to him. He really didn't understand as he listened to a very powerful man compliment his daughter. "Ay Dios mio. *(Oh my God.)* What a day. Thank you, Larry."

Lupe then sat in Tony's lap and put her arm around his neck and said "Papi, I like this place. I feel at home here."

Connie walked up and said "Hey Lupe, you want go see the trick bike riding exhibit? It's right over there. See the bikes going in the air?" Lupe said "Bring your family and I'll bring my dad." So everybody including Larry went together to see the kids do tricks on bikes. They were demonstrating a hard surface that can instantly change to a very soft and spongy surface. A kid would go high into the air and intentionally let go of the bike and plummet to the surface. The crowd would gasp thinking he was going to smack himself and maybe break an arm or a leg. But the surface instantly thickened to five feet of spongy material right at the point of impact. Then it went down flat and hard moments after the rider hit. "That's amazing" said Travis. "Wish they'd had that on my skateboard runs."

The group continued through the science exhibit where they saw so many advances they started to get a little burned out. "Mom, this stuff is really cool, but can we go have some fun." said Sophia. "I second that, baby." said Norma. She looked at everybody's burned out faces and said "Who up for a little fun. Those who want to go to the amusement park, raise your hand." Everybody in the group had that "Thank God" look on their faces and raised their hands. "Then, let's book this place." smiled Norma. She took Larry's hand and said "Let's go have some fun." Larry responded "That place is for kids, Norma. I'll feel out of place." Her alluring green eyes lit up as she said "Kids don't have a monopoly on fun, Larry. Let's go." So Larry gave in to this

bright, beautiful, strong, fun loving woman who was fifteen years younger in years but older than him in life. Outside the biosphere as they were getting on a trolley Larry said, "Hey, Serge. You're coming too. Hop on man, it's time to let your hair down and have some fun."

As they were traveling toward the amusement park Larry told the driver to stop for a moment. Next to the trolley was Mark Zuckerberg in a flimsy disguise walking with his girlfriend. Larry said "Where are you two headed." Mark said "We're thinking amusement park." Larry said "That's where we're going. Hop on." As Mark and his girlfriend were jumping on he looked over at Larry and said "I didn't know they allowed dinosaurs in the park. Is there a Jurassic section?" and he laughed. "Serge said "Real funny, Mark. Looks like you might be ready for your next diaper change. I'm sorry but I forgot to bring diaper rash cream." "HaHaHa, Brin. How would you know about diapers since you were hatched out of an egg?" "Ok boys, let's tone it down." said Norma in a raised voice. "I'm sorry, Norma. I didn't introduce you to my friend Mark. Mark this is Norma Corona." Everybody on the trolley introduced themselves and their kids to Mark and his girlfriend, Hanna. Connie said "Your name is Hanna like the girl in the movie [Hanna](#). You know you look just like her." Hanna said "I get that a lot, but Saoirse Ronan and I aren't related." Connie said "She could be your doppelganger."

Lupe whispered "Dad, that's Mark Zuckerberg, the guy who created Facebook. His team also created the universal language translator." "Madre de Dios" (*Mother of God*) said Tony, "Can this day get any stranger." "It's ok, papi. They're people just like you and me. Don't worry about it." "But it seems you are more like them than the rest of us, mija." "Daa...aad. I just like questioning everything, discovering new stuff and relationships and writing it all down using math. ...But I'm always going to be your baby girl. Ok?" as Lupe hugs him in soft reassurance. "Where did you pick up all that math anyway, mija." "My foster parents were nuclear physicists. She worked at home while she took care of us. We were home schooled. She showed me a lot and she turned me on to a cool online math site called [Kahn Academy](#). Every day as an escape, I'd spend hours on Kahn. Even now when we're not doing stuff, I get on the site for at least 10 minutes day to see what's new."

[The amusement park](#)

The trip on the trolley to the amusement park couldn't go fast enough for the kids. As they were jumping off, Lupe went over to Connie and said "I've never seen an outfit like yours. It's really cool." Connie said "Thanks. I designed it myself and my mom made it. We like to do this kind of stuff. See what mom is wearing. I designed that too." "Wow." said Lupe. Connie said "Mom found a place that would take a high pixel .jpg file of a design, then refine it, and put it on almost any fabric we choose. And the cost is cheap. Mom said she wants us all to be an original "one of a kind". So what do you say we get our parents on the giant rollercoaster."

The rollercoaster was next to the park entrance. Sophia said "It's like the Disney one in California. Ay Ay Ay, look at the size of that rollercoaster. It looks scary." Connie said "No seas miedosa (*don't be afraid*), Sophia." "I'm not. I was just thinking about Travis." Connie said "Travis, you ready for the ride of your life?" "Sure, let's go." All in the group were saying things to try to convince themselves not to ride. But they saw people getting off saying they wanted to do it again. "What the heck," said Norma, "We might as well." The group waited in line for 10 minutes. Norma was concerned about Nellie not being big enough. But the sign said

it was safe for ages 6 and up. Larry told Norma he was deathly afraid of [roller coasters](#). "Then you'll sit next to me, ok?" Norma continued, "Connie, you sit next to Nellie. And Sophia, if it's ok with Laurie, you sit next to Travis." Laurie said she would sit next to Serge." Finally the moment arrived. They all took a seat and were locked in. Larry and Norma were in the front car. The guy running the ride told everybody to get ready for a wild unexpected ride that no other roller coaster in the world can deliver. What he didn't say was the previous week they just finished installing a special high powered electromagnetic device along a portion of the track that will actually push the cars off the track to give the riders the experience of flying through the air. Then as the tracks rise the cars will come down and hook up again.

A voice on the loudspeaker came on telling the riders to sit back and hold on tight. The cars climbed from their nesting area to the top of the first 200 foot rise. Then the screaming began as they plummeted down an 80 degree descent. The cars zoomed up and down and through barrel rolls. Just as they were getting used to the ride, the cars went up and left the tracks and floated through the air about a foot above the rails. Larry grabbed Norma's arm and started screaming like a little girl "We're gonna die, we're gonna die. AAAAAAAAH!" Then as the tracks went up and connected to the cars again, Norma screamed with joy "No we're not, no we're not!" and started laughing and laughing.

As they were getting off the ride everybody went over to get a photo of themselves screaming in total fear when the cars were flying through the air. Tony said "Lupe, I didn't think you could open your mouth and eyes that wide all at the same time." "Daddy, I've never ridden on a rollercoaster before." Then she laughed "And I'll never ride one again."

"Mommy, that was fun, can we go again? Huh, mom. Can we go again." asked little Nellie. "Maybe tomorrow, baby." replied Norma. Sophia was walking next to Travis and said "I didn't know White boys could turn that white, Travis." And she laughed. "What?... this is my normal color." said Travis. "When we hit the air, you turned whiter than a sheet of paper." said Sophia. "Well that didn't stop you from holding on to my arm so tight my circulation got cut off." "That's because I think you're cute, Travis." "Yeah, riiight. Aaaa... wha'd you say." "Nothing."

Immediately after the ride Mark went over to some plants and couldn't hold it. He lost his lunch. Serge walked over and put his arm around him and in a consoling voice "They need to make sure the ride comes equipped with barf bags. Are you ok, man." "I'm ok. I think it was all that gefilte fish. It was so good going down." "How does it taste now, bud?" "A little acidic," said Mark, "Got some mouthwash?"

The group gathered together and decided to do the tilt-a-whirl next. Larry, Bubba, Tony, Serge, and Mark decided to sit out a few while Norma, Laurie and Mark's girlfriend took the kids on some more crazy rides. "Mark, you know what'll make you feel better after losing your lunch," said Bubba, "You need a Tecate with some lime and salt, buddy. Here, let me get you one. Waiter..." Serge said "That's right Mark. It actually won't make you feel any better, but you won't care." So they ordered a round of beers. Larry lifted his bottle and said "I'd like to make to toast...To life and the fun it brings." They clanked drinks and took a good long swig. "Aaaah, now that's good beer."

"Bubba, I overheard you talking about how farming is changing across America." said Larry. Bubba responded "It's changing in this sense... It's becoming more balanced. For instance the largest pig slaughterhouse in the world was operated by the Smithfield Packing Company in Tar Heel, North Carolina. It killed and butchered over 32,000 pigs a day. This company was completely profit oriented and didn't care about hurting the animals or the employees. They dropped groups of pigs onto a platform. Then walls came together and compressed and killed the pigs. Then they were hung upside down on hooks and disemboweled even if they were still alive. And about one out of 30 pigs were dead when they arrived at the docks and they were processed anyway not knowing if they were diseased. Smithfield liked to hire illegal aliens because they could pay them less money, work them longer hours, and treat them like crap. This was the universal mindset of all large multi-national food processors. All that has changed, and the people who managed these companies are gone. Now the farmers in America take care of the entire food process. From planting and raising to harvesting and slaughtering to packaging and wholesaling, it's the farmer or farmers via coops who do all the work. And it's all kept local. Instead of only a few mammoth sized animal processing plants in the US, there are processing plants outside every city run by local farmers. This is true with dairies, too. All farmers in the US are required to diversify their products. I remember years ago driving through the Midwest, I never saw a vegetable farm. Only grain crops. But that's changed now."

Larry said "A few weeks ago I flew into a little farming community named Minden in Nebraska. I was looking for some Rye grain. It's the middle of the growing season so I had to find a farmer that had some of last year's harvest stored away. The farmer met me at the landing strip. It was around noon time so we first went to get some lunch at the local restaurant called Barney's. The food was prepared by this older woman the customers called mom. Before I went into the restaurant I looked around the back. There were several fields of grass and vegetables. Behind the building were large pens where I saw pigs, cows, chicken coups, and goats. The owner told me that was his food pantry. The bacon and fresh ham I was eating came from a pig he had just butchered early that morning. He said he picked up the eggs I was eating just before I came in, and the eggs came from chickens that forage on dried cow poop. Then the owner looked to see if I would continue eating. I did and they were delicious. Free ranging organic and perfectly cooked. The farmer I was with said they don't get many pencil neck city folk around here. So they like to see if they can have a little fun with us. After lunch, we filled some fifty pound sacks with rye grain. Dale, the farmer, said he'd be glad to supply the museum with all the grain, vegetables, chicken, and beef he could produce. He took me back to the airstrip and helped me load up the Cessna Caravan. Then I took him up so he could show me the local farms. He knew everybody and exactly how much land they had. The diversity of crops and farm animals was excellent. You're right, Bubba. They've all moved away from monoculture and back into agriculture."

Larry said "Hey Tony, what type of work do you do?" Tony replied "Construction. When I was a kid, I used to help my dad do "frame up" and "rough in" on homes. We also poured foundations and did a little masonry and stucco. The bottom fell out of construction. My dad moved back to Mexico and I got a job as an assembly line worker at a manufacturing plant. Then they moved all production to China. I lost my job and eventually ran out of money. My wife left me. And social services took my daughter away because I was homeless and couldn't

support her. Lupe probably already told you about that." "Yes, she did," replied Larry. Tony continued "After the Big Change I got back into construction." "That's good." said Larry. Tony continued "There's a high demand for homes and remodeling now. Many people who were desk jockeys before the Big Change moved into construction work. A couple of years ago there were a lot of these people getting hurt on jobs. So I've been spending most of my time teaching people how to work within their physical capabilities and to follow all the OSHA rules and regulations." Serge said "I knew transitioning to different jobs would pose problems, but I didn't think how potentially dangerous it would be." Bubba said "Yeah, you have a guy who grows up in a big city and goes to college, gets a degree in history then works at a desk for ten years. Then he signs up to build houses and you know there's going to be problems." "You'd be surprised," said Tony, "Most of these desk jockeys are pretty bright and they learn quickly. But the biggest problem is getting them used to being outside in the sun and drinking enough water and not overdoing it physically. When a person is having a heat stroke, they don't realize it. In fact the worse they get the better they feel."

Mark said "I'm thinking about building an earthen home. Do you know much about them?" Tony said "Many people go to earthen to get closer to nature and cut energy costs. I personally don't like having dirt next to walls because you have to put in a moisture barrier otherwise you'll get mold, rot, and cracks from water damage. Sometimes the barriers don't hold up."

Tony continued "Mark, right now I'm building a home out of tilt-up concrete. The outside walls and roof are a composite. I put three inches of Styrofoam between three inches of concrete on both sides. The concrete has epoxy to make it lighter and more resilient. The windows are three pane, gas filled, and aluminum framed. In fact the house would be completely air tight which is bad since the air would get stale. So we put in long finned air coils that stretch across the length of the home's interior so the outside air becomes the interior ambient temperature before it enters the rooms." Mark said "I imagine a home like this would last forever." Tony said "Probably, but the fun thing is the concrete forms we're using. The outside looks like the house is a 100 year old adobe structure. And the R value is just as high as three foot wide adobe walls. So I'm going to have a house made of sand, cement, and a polymer, the most plentiful materials you can imagine. And it looks and feels like a home my great grandparents would have lived in." "That's pretty cool." said Mark.

Serge said "Mark, I heard you have a special car." "Yeah, it's custom made from scratch." said Mark. "Well, what is it?" asked Bubba. Mark smiled and said "You know one night I was watching some old music videos that you dinosaurs used to like. One particular vid by ZZ Top caught my attention. "Well, go on." "It's called [Gimme all your lovin](#). The star of the vid was a 33' ford coupe. That was a nice car." Larry said "Let's see, I was probably 10 when that vid came out. I understand why you liked the car, Mark. What about the tall skinny girls?" "They were smooth," sighed Mark. "So you have a deuce coupe now?" asked Serge. Mark replied "It's a 1933 ford coupe. And yes, I bought a fiberglass body and had a shop in LA build the bottom frame and they put in a 427 with a turbocharger. We put it on a dyno and it... "Put it on a what?" interrupted Larry. "They put the back wheels on a dynamometer. It measures horsepower. Or in your case dinosaur power may be a more appropriate and relatable term." "Funny, Mark." "Anyway, the engine turns 1400 horsepower. The rear end has a 411 with Detroit lockers. And, the tranny is a heavy duty short throw seven speed manual with the last

two gears being overdrive. I never learned how to use a stick, so it took me a month of practice to get it down." "Did you paint it red and put Zs on the sides." asked Bubba. Mark said "Do dinosaurs lay eggs? It's the coolest ride I've ever had. Ten years ago I had a Rolls, then I got a Lamborghini, then I got a Bugatti Veyron. For the money, that car was a rip off. Then I started thinking "Simplify, Clarify, and Economize." Serge laughed and said "Sort of like the movie the first 20 million?" "Exactly," said Mark. Tony said "I remember that movie. I liked the fat guy genius." "Me too. Anyway," said Mark, "I started driving simpler cars. Then this year I reached the pinnacle. My 33 coupe has no upholstery, no radio, no a/c. It's nothing but a cage with four wheels a seat and an engine. And then it came to me." Serge said "Don't tell me it was your Muse for creating the instantaneous universal voice and text language translator?" Mark said "Exactly. Everybody tried to make translating language something difficult but then I got my team to pull all the crap out of the way and focus only on the simplest no frills solution. And there it was. Simplify, Clarify, and Economize." Larry said "However the heck you did it, Mark, it's one hell of a translator." "Thanks, man. That means a lot. I'm starting to feel no pain now. How about another round. Oh, and by the way, I believe that's how our lives should be. All the gadgets and fancy things people aspire to have and all the games of one upmanship people play just cloud the real meaning of life, the core....." Bubba said "Well, Mark, you got us hooked, now don't just sit there, reel us in and tell us what you think it is." Mark smiled and said "It's sitting down with some good people, drinking some beer, and shootin some bull." Tony laughed and said "Damn right. Let's get you another beer. Waiter...."

Larry then said "Hey Mark, I've got a person you could put on your one of your teams." "Oh?" said Mark "Does he use a cane like yourself." Larry said "Thanks a lot, Mark. I'm only 44. Let's don't rush things. And to answer your question... no. The he is a she and she's 13 years old. She's Tony's daughter." Mark said "This Tony?" Larry said "Yep." Mark said "How long have you known Tony's daughter. What's her name again?" Larry said "Lupe. And I've only known her since lunch today." Mark said "You applied your instant [heuristic](#) appraisal process, didn't you." Larry said "Call it what you like. Bottom line, she's a diamond that just fell into my lap." "So why don't you have her work for you?" asked Mark. Larry said "I heard you have a team working on space travel, right?" Mark said "Elon Musk came to me with the problem of the human body not tolerating extreme acceleration to reach speeds necessary for long distance space travel. And even at 186,000 miles per second it would still take hundreds of years to reach a desired destination. That would mean we'd have to get into cryogenics and other complicated crap. He suggested we pool our resources and figure out how to put tiny rips in space and maybe time." "Right," said Larry, "Wormholes. It's all been theoretical but now I hear you guys are performing some experiments. And this is where Lupe can help you. She is the truest divergent I've come across in years. She's just exploding with intuitive creativity. You know, in fact all of you know we humans are the most creative from about age 11 to age 20. Right? The most powerful force made available to humankind is imagination. And imagination starts at birth. Then mix in some knowledge of our reality we pick up along the way. Now you've got a ten or eleven year old who believes anything is possible. Mark, you wrote most of your Facebook code when you were still a teenager. All I'm saying is Lupe is now in the sweet zone for divergents, and if you bring her up to speed on everything you've done so far I know she will show you things you've never dreamed of." "Ok, let's do it." said Mark.

"Hey, hey guys, that's my daughter you're talking about. I'm not sure if that would be the right thing for HER at this point in her life. You know?" remarked Tony. Larry looked at Tony and suggested "Lupe is enjoying being a kid. None of that would change. She would be with Mark's group only a few hours a day. That's all she would need. After listening to Lupe talk at the seminar today I can see she's hungry for this kind of stuff. You've been through a lot, Tony. Being homeless and having your child taken from you was a horrible crime committed against you and Lupe by our old screwed up society. But that's all changed now. Instead of pushing you down into a hole, we the People lifted you and Lupe up so you could have a good life along with the rest of us. But part of having our children be happy is finding out what they love, then turning them loose with the necessary tools so they can be fulfilled and transcend into something greater than themselves. I could see it in her eyes as she was talking to me. She's thirsty for knowledge to fill in the spaces of her imagination. I'm sure you've seen that in her too, Tony."

Tony admitted "Actually, I have, Larry. She's always asking questions about everything. I thought it was just a kid thing. But some of the questions were way over my head. I just don't want to lose her again. Mark, if she worked with you, I would have to be close by all the time." Mark assured him "I wouldn't have it any other way, Tony. If it would be ok, we would have you involved with construction work at the facility where Lupe would be working. Would that be ok?" Tony said "Lupe and I need to talk about this tonight. I need to see what she really wants. And I don't want to get in the way of her happiness. I just need to be sure if this would make her happy." Bubba affirmed "I couldn't have said it better myself, Tony. Hey look, the ladies are coming this way."

Mark's girlfriend, Hanna, walked up and asked him "How are you doing, babe" as she pulled up a chair, sat down, and put her arm around him. Mark said, "I've had two Tecates and life is good. How about you?" She said "We did the tilt-a-whirl, the swinging pirate ship, the spinning tea cups, and the bumper cars. During the bumper cars, Connie and Lupe ganged up on me. They were knocking me around the floor and shoved me in a corner. Then I decided to open a can of whoop ass on em." Mark said "Sounds like you, Lupe and Connie have quickly become butt kicking kindred spirits." Connie walked over and told Mark "Your girlfriend is lots of fun. Why don't you just stay here and we'll go on some more rides with her." Hanna said "Let's sit down and take a short break before we go have some more fun." Lupe said "Don't get down, girl. Get up offa that thing." Connie turned on her palm sized mp4 holographic projection player and set it on the table. Then Connie and Lupe stepped back and started get'n down dancing like James Brown, and sing'n "[Get up offa that thing](#), and dance till you feel better. Get up offa that thing, try to release that pressure. Get up offa that thing, and twist till you feel better. Get up offa that thing, Hanna, and dance till you feel better." Then a [Shakira](#) video came on and Lupe pulled Hanna up and she joined in. The people at the tables around started clapping along with the music. After the song ended Connie and Lupe said "Way to go Hanna, you really get down." "Where d'you pick up those moves?" Hanna said "I've danced since I was a kid. When I graduated high school this year, a Broadway show picked me up. Now I'm one of the lead dancers." Lupe said "High school? High school?! That means you're old enough to be my sister, and Mark's old enough to be your father. Hahahahaha." "Hey, I'm only 33!" said Mark. "That's ok, Mark," said Bubba, "You're only as old as you feel." "Then Connie chimed in "Or who you feel. Hahahaha." Norma said "Calma te. No eres payasa (*you're not a clown*), Canija. Don't talk like that." "Ok, mom."

Then the kids sat down at a table next to the grownups and started pretending they had too many beers. Norma saw them out of the corner of her eye and said "Ok kids, I can see you have too much energy to sit still. So let's hit some more rides. Who else wants to come along?" Hanna, Laurie, and Tony volunteered and away they went. Norma turned to Larry, Serge, Mark, and Bubba and said we'll be back in 30 to 60 minutes to pick you guys up.

"Wow, she talks just like my mother. Are you sure she's not Jewish." said Mark. Larry smiled and said "Yeah, she's great isn't she." Mark said "Let's see, a strong person with a moral compass. Sounds like we're talking about you Larry. Good god. Bore me to death man." "Well I like her, so eat sh-t Zuckerberg." They all laughed. Then Mark said "That precocious little Lupe did her math instantly. You may be right about her, Larry." Larry laughed.

Bubba noticed Serge was in excellent physical condition and asked "Serge, where do you work out, bud. You got muscles on muscles, man." Serge said "I have a problem with Parkinson's disease in my family. There's a chance I'll contract it when I'm older. Maybe staying fit will reduce that probability. And, about four years ago my doctor said my blood pressure was too high and I needed to lose some weight or I wouldn't be seeing him for my next annual. Didn't need to tell me twice. I put in a gym at my home and hired a personal trainer and a cook to prepare low calorie meals." Bubba said "Must be nice to afford those things." Serge said "But all that money spent didn't work. A friend of mine who was already in great physical condition asked me to come work out with him at Gold's Gym. I went the next day and every third day since. This is the result four years later." Bubba said "So what made the difference?" Serge said "I was around people who were committed to being healthy and strong. Peer pressure and camaraderie. The best solutions are often the simplest and least expensive, Bubba." Serge looked at Bubba and said "Some people are lucky and are huge giants like yourself, Bubba." Bubba said "I have to work out every day so this body won't get fat. Because of the unhealthy food before the Big Change it seemed everybody was overweight. My dad used to say we went from a beautiful healthy skinny to pleasingly plump, and then to ferociously fat in less than fifty years. And just before the BC there were thousands of beached whale sightings all over the US. Serge, beached whales run in my family." They laughed.

So after an hour of laying back and enjoying peace in a storm of little munchkins having fun, Norma came back with the wild bunch. "Ok, guys its 8:00. Mark... Hanna needs you to put your arm around her. Bubba, we need your huge body to clear a path for us. Serge and Larry, let's go." Mark put his arm around Norma, smiled and said "Ok, mom."

Laurie, Norma, and Hanna convinced the gang to sit 45 minutes through a musical about the Big Change. Norma said she liked the part where the President tried to enforce martial law and the army told him no. Lupe said she liked it when the locations of the homes of all the congressmen were identified by [Anonymous](#) on phone apps, and the People started taking the families and burning their houses down. Larry said "When it became obvious that the People were taking over, the Supreme Court, to save their skin, held Congress and the President in contempt. Then they authorized an immediate vote to decide if the country would be a direct democracy." Norma said "That's when you stepped forward along with Serge and Mark and the rest of you guys to give the People the ability to use their phone and computers to vote." Larry said "Bill

Gates and Larry Ellison were also cajoled into it. But to a lesser degree." Mark said, "The kings didn't like abdicating their thrones to the People." "They weren't that bad." said Serge.

Norma jumped up on a 2 foot retaining wall and faced the group. "There's going to be some music and dancing at the other end of the park. It's starting in few minutes. This is one of the stops for the "freedom train" that'll take us there. You guys up for some music and dancing? "What kind of music?" asked Bubba and Laurie. Norma said "The brochure here says every thirty minutes there will be something different. There's hip hop, Latin, rock, and country. It says first up is some hip hop [street](#) dancing which I'm sure the kids and Hanna will love. Then some Latin music with [Los Lobos](#). Then [One Direction](#). Then [Ariana Grande](#). Then [Arctic Monkeys](#) and [Kacey Musgraves](#). And last but not least is [Pharrell Williams](#).

"Let's do it" yelled Mark. In less than five minutes they're all aboard the freedom train. It's powered by a steam engine that uses coal to heat the water. The exhaust from the burning coal is sprayed to retrieve all the particulates and the remainder is run through a special converter to turn the rest into harmless water vapor.

Each car carries about 40 people and has a karaoke machine. Sophia spotted it, ran over and flipped it to [The Hokey Pokey](#) song. She, Connie, Nellie, Lupe, and Hanna danced in place as they sang along to the lyrics. Everybody in the train car was applauding as they reached their destination.

[Trouble](#)

It was nine o'clock and the crowd was huge. For the kids' safety, the group decided to stick together. The area had a large stage and immediately in front of the stage was a 300' by 600' floor with speakers all along the way. Most of the dancing was happening at the opposite end of the stage. Norma moved the group to the dance area. The hip hop songs were just finishing up and the latin dance was starting.

Norma grew up in a very rough neighborhood. She learned the hard way to constantly be aware of her environment. Without realizing it, she quickly surveyed people's eyes, facial expressions, and body movements. After seeing the people around her, she felt a little uncomfortable. With a commanding voice she told Connie, Sophia, and Nellie to stick close. Laurie said Travis wanted to dance with Sophia, so she would watch the kids while she was dancing with Bubba whose son Austin was dancing with Lupe. Serge and Tony were very good dancers, so they were showing little Nellie some new dance steps. Norma briefly mentioned her safety concerns to the men in the group. They agreed to be careful.

Norma thought, finally I get to dance with this man. He's a little older but he's been nothing but good to me today. Latin dance music was playing. Norma took Larry's hand and started showing him some [steps](#) to the bachata and the cumbia. Then Los Lobos started to play [Cumbia Raza](#). Larry was thinking he hadn't had this much fun in years as he was getting the hang of the steps and the rhythm and Norma's mesmerizing smile. Connie dancing next to Lupe tapped her on the arm. She said "Mira (*Look*). Es la Virgen de Guadalupe (*it's the Virgin Mary*) above the band. That's a sign of good luck, Lupe. She's watching over you." Lupe smiled and nodded as she was grooving out to the music.

Then someone bumped into the back of Larry. Larry turned around and saw this huge bearded angry looking guy yelling at him. The guy with a hard accent said "Watch it stupid, you kicked my leg." He immediately pulled Larry's arm to get him off balance and to put his weight on his right leg. He instantly did a judo leg sweep on that leg to throw him down on the floor. Then he proceeded to kick the crap out of Larry.

Larry immediately struggled to get up when another guy grabbed him from behind, stood him up, one arm was around his chest and his other hand was holding Larry's head back exposing his neck. The first guy had already pulled out a long curved ceramic composite knife and was moving to slash Larry's throat as he shouted "Allah Akbar". Norma screamed "Not to Larry, you jerk!" In an instant she kicked him square in the groin and he doubled over and fell to the floor. Then moving as swiftly and fiercely as a tiger, she spun around at lightning speed, swinging her right leg horizontally, kicking the guy holding Larry in the ribs. He grimaced in extreme pain letting go of Larry and in a flash Norma jumped on him, face to face locking her legs around his waist. Holding the back of his head with the inside of her elbow, she instantly thrust her long sharp right thumbnail straight into his left eye tearing it to shreds. As he was wailing in pain and stumbling to the floor she jumped off like a cat on all fours. Crouching low she saw the other guy trying to get up. She sprang over to him, kicking him extremely hard in the head, knocking him out. Then she started kicking his face as hard as she could screaming "die! you motherf--ker, die!, die!..."

At the same time that Larry was attacked, a guy had grabbed Mark from behind and was pulling his head back so he could slash his throat. Bubba was standing next to Mark and yelled "I don't think so!" Bubba grabbed the assailant's wrist so hard he screamed and released the knife. Then he picked him up over his head and slammed him head first into the floor crushing his skull. Bubba was world wrestler huge.

Serge was staring at Bubba when another terrorist grabbed him from behind too. A very muscular Tony, standing next to Serge had won the state of New Mexico golden gloves boxing title, so he knew the vulnerable points on a man's head. He made a solid fist and punched him as hard and with as much follow through as he possibly could on his left temple and knocked him out cold.

Then out of the middle of nowhere there were four security women around Larry. One was holding the screaming banshee version of Norma so she wouldn't kill the attackers. Two were picking the knife and the mangled men off the floor and one was seeing if Larry was ok. Within seconds four security women also came up to Serge and Mark. In less than two minutes, twenty security people were protecting Larry's group of 14. The head agent said "We need to get out of here NOW." A secret service agent was running alongside each of the kids. Nellie was too small, so a very large agent scooped her up and ran with her in his arms. Norma yelled "My children!" Larry said "Don't worry, Norma, I've had the best people in the business protecting your kids since lunch." Norma instantly thought to herself "My butt you have." Larry said "See, they're right behind us. We've got to move. Hurry!" In another two minutes 10 more agents were with the group. Agents were holding up ballistic blankets to protect them as they ran through the building and into the hard cars waiting outside.

In the distance outside the building they heard machine gun fire. A Blackhawk hovering over their vehicles was returning fire. Norma heard swish swish swish..... boom boom boom. And again... swish swish swish..... boom boom boom. Then the enemy fire fell silent. But some mortars started to hit the parking lot close to the buildings. Larry talked to the man in the front seat on the passenger side. Larry said "Light up the entire site including 1000 feet beyond the perimeter. I want to see who in the hell is ruining my evening." The man said "I'm sorry sir but we can't. In a few minutes forty stealth Blackhawks will be establishing a perimeter around the museum." He continued "As you can see we shut down all exterior lighting. Right now the PA system inside all the buildings is telling the patrons to sit still because the inside lights are being turned off. The only people moving will be the perpetrators wearing night vision. Infrared lighting is painting the entire interior of the museum and the thousands of pinhole cameras you had installed will instantly detect any movement."

The guy in the front seat turned to Larry and said "Sir, the area outside the wire is deemed unsafe for now. As you can hear, we have a C-130 Gunship two clicks from here taking out a group that was firing mortars from a trench and we see some odd pedestrian movement outside the wire. We have to take you to a bunker, sir. We're locking down the museum all the way to the perimeter fencing." Larry said "Take us to bunker C. It's the closest." "Yes sir."

The six hard cars escorted by two Humvees with turret mounted 50 cal. machine guns drove a short distance to a spot where a section of the pavement was raising up just high enough to allow the vehicles to go down a ramp and into the bunker. The bunker was about 30 feet down and protected by 10 feet of solid concrete. As the lights were being flipped on Larry turned to Norma and said "We should be safe here until they figure out what's going on. And thank you for saving my life." Norma got out of the suburban and ran over to her kids. "Connie, Sophia, Nellie. Are you ok? Thank God." She then turned to Larry and said "You keep us safe, Larry, or I swear to God, I'll wring your neck." "Don't worry, Norma. You'll be ok," said Larry, "We all know that the Big Change comes with a price. There are outside influences that are hell bent on destroying all we've done. And they think that blowing up this facility would deliver one hell of a message. But in reality all it would do is stir up the People like a nest of hornets and then all Hell would break loose. I'm sorry all of you were involved in this. But we couldn't just leave you there. You were too vulnerable." Then Norma looked at Larry and started crying while she clutched him tightly. "My God, this is some serious shit, Larry..... Thank you. It seems like that's all I've been doing is thanking you today." Larry smiled and said "You saved my life, Norma. Where'd you learn to fight like that?" Then Serge and Mark came up to Larry and said "I think our friends botched their plan to take us out. They were concentrating on security but ignored the ordinary people we had lunch with." Larry said "Thank God." Mark said "We're going to have to get our teams together and make this facility completely safe. Even if that includes eliminating all threats five miles in every direction from here. Serge said "Look the biggest threat is surprise from the air. We all know that. It's time we exclusively dedicate several of our cold fusion powered low earth orbit stationary satellites directly over this museum....."

While the guys were talking, Norma was trying to compose herself. She walked over to what looked like the leader of the military group that evacuated them. She said "Who are you guys,

and how come I didn't see you guarding us this afternoon." The man said "Ma'am, my name is Cletus Jackson and my group is one of several around the country that protect the Pioneers." Norma paused for a second, ".....Right. I get it.The most important people aren't the President and Congress anymore. They're gone. Thank God for that.But the most valuable commodity is now the people who helped make all this happen... The Pioneers." "That's right, ma'am. They're called that in the Recognition building. The Pioneers are pushing like crazy to spread their knowledge and abilities to as many people as possible in case..... well in case..... you know..." Norma said "After what just happened, I know very well..... It got way too damned up close and personal." "And I think you really need to work on speeding up your response time." Cletus said "You're right about that. Thank goodness you three were there. And by the way, where did you learn how to fight like that?" Norma said "I had the required police training right after the Big Change. They nicknamed me "[Switchblade](#)" because I keep my thumbnails long and sharp. And me and my crew took care of our own just fine in high school. No what I mean." "I hear ya, momma." as Cletus was laughing. Norma came up close and whispered "Don't snitch bout me being in a gang." Cletus winked and went back to business.

Cletus called everybody together, introduced himself and said "The entire museum is on lockdown tonight. Tonight we'll have soldiers canvassing every square inch of the grounds and buildings for chemical, biological, and nuclear weapons. Sorry for the inconvenience, there's bunks, pillows, sheets, blankets, snacks and water. It looks like we'll be staying the night here. The entire group said "Thanks, Cletus."

After Norma cleaned the messy blood off her arms, hands, legs, dress, and shoes, she finally sat down in a big comfy chair to rest. "What a day," she thought, "What... a... day....." Little Nellie saw her mom staring blankly into space. Concerned, she ran over, climbed up on her lap and gently hugged her. Nellie lovingly laid her head on Norma's shoulder and softly said "Mom, you're my hero..... I'm glad tonight's over with. I was getting sleepy anyway. Can we go to bed now?" As tears filled Norma's eyes, she hugged her little munchkin and said "Sure, let's try to get a good night's rest." So they quietly went to bed. The precious kids were knocked out all night long sleeping like little logs. Not so easy for Norma. It was hard to sleep over the sound of her thoughts.

Cletus switched on the bunker parking area lights at 6:00am. Per Larry's request, a couple hard cars went out for twenty minutes, then came back with breakfast for all. The waitress named Jenny was the first to step out of the chow wagon. She was directing the agents where to put the boxes on the tables. She set it up DFAC or cafeteria style. Just before the Big Change, Jenny served a tour of duty as a Marine in Afghanistan. Her dream after she got back was to work at the Museum, the greatest symbol of Patriotism and Country. But this morning she's very quiet and very serious.

The girls slept in one section and the guys in another. The men were the first to get up. The secret service agents had already went to the Bed & Breakfasts and brought back everybody's suitcases. The female soldiers and female secret service agents quietly got up at 0530 and were dressed and out working at 0600. Norma was the first of the civilians to stir in the girls section. Nellie was lying next to her. In a low voice Norma said "Connie, Sophia, Nellie, it's time to wake up." At first they were making little noises, then came the I don't want to get ups. And

finally they had to go to the bathroom, so Norma handed them each a change of clothes from the luggage she found, and a clean towel, a bar of soap, and some shampoo to take a shower with. It was about 8:10 when Hanna, Norma, Laurie, Lupe, Connie, Sophia, and Nellie finally sauntered through the door to eat some breakfast.

Jenny said "We were starting to wonder how much beauty sleep you girls needed." as they were all moving slowly. "Ok, everybody else has already eaten. But don't worry we have plenty for you guys." They formed two lines. At the beginning of each line was a big griddle where an employee from the Freedom Train restaurant was standing ready to cook an egg white omelet, bacon, ham, or pancakes. A few steps over was the oatmeal and cream of wheat. After that was a selection of sliced watermelon, cantaloupe, and pineapple along with fresh strawberries and blueberries. At the end of each line was water, cold chocolate milk, coffee and iced tea. As expected the kids just wanted pancakes with strawberries and cream on top and blueberry syrup with crispy bacon. Hanna had the "red, white, and blue" pancakes and bacon, too. Austin was sitting next to Lupe having seconds of the crispy bacon and drinking an orange juice.

As Norma was slowly eating her Spanish omelet, with a cup of hot coffee, she noticed Larry and all the agents and soldiers were at the other end of the bunker speaking in muffled tones. She got Larry's attention and waved him over. She said "What's up?" Larry moved Norma to a table away from the kids and said "We've got a problem." "I wanted you to have a good night's rest and a nice breakfast, so I didn't tell you that the military spotted the terrorists about thirty minutes after we entered the bunker. They were all taken out, but one of them was able to release a nerve gas canister in the amusement park area. Fifteen hundred people were murdered. Larry said "We were lucky. Only one canister was released. The others malfunctioned. And luckily, we anticipated this as a possibility when we made the building. We installed super high velocity exhaust fans in the ceilings and fresh air ports were installed all along the bottom sides. But it wasn't enough for those 1,500 people who died." Norma's eyes started to tear up. Larry continued, "Last night they located a small nuclear device near the capitol building and disarmed it. This morning at 7:30am, nerve gas was released in the New York City subway system. Thousands are probably dead. Fifteen minutes ago a small suitcase bomb, a nuclear device, was detonated in downtown Chicago. Our satellites estimate at least 50,000 people are dead or dying. And God only knows what's next. When you're finished eating, I'd like to move all of us over to the "Situation" area in the Humanity building.

Norma immediately got up and walked over to the kids eating and said "We need to move to the Humanity building as soon as possible, so finish up and make sure you drink all your milk, OK?" As Norma walked away the kids looked at each other. Austin said "What do you think's the matter?" Lupe sitting next to him said "Some really nasty shit's going down. I could tell by looking at Larry's face." Connie looked at Sophia and Nellie and said "Let's book this place. There's more important stuff going on." All the kids got up and chucked the remainder of their food in the garbage can and carried their drinks with them.

By then everybody was standing next to the vehicles. Cletus, in a sullen voice said, "Let's roll." As they were leaving the bunker Larry told Norma this was a unified act of terrorism by men from Saudi Arabia, Iran, Egypt, Kazakhstan, Kyrgyzstan, Uzbekistan, and Turkmenistan. Because every nuclear device leaves a signature of their origin, it only took a few minutes for our

military to determine the nuclear bomb came from Iran. Norma said with extreme anger "Islam. Submission. Damn those men. We don't submit to anybody." Larry said "Your words may be closer to the truth than you think, Norma."

As the hard cars were moving across the parking lot they saw military vehicles and soldiers everywhere. They saw a very large tent with a sign hanging near the opening that said "Triage". Then there was another tent that said "Morgue". The area was organized chaos with people and emergency vehicles constantly moving. Norma had her girls with her. She told them to look down as she saw scores of families screaming and crying as they were holding their dead loved ones. The group pulled up to the Humanity building and the agents quickly escorted them to the Situation area. Serge was talking to Larry and Mark. "The People have control now." Larry looked at him "And that's the way it should be." Mark inserted "Remember, two years ago the People planned and put into place what preliminary actions we would take if something like this ever happened." Serge and Larry said "We know. We helped them do it." Larry said "It's just so surreal to see it happening in an almost robotic automated fashion."

Larry was speaking of the process occurring as they watched the screens. All communications for the last 12 hours of all Muslims around the world were being scanned and interpreted with summary results constantly being posted on every US voting citizen's computer and cell phone. A predetermined series of questions and responses were occurring based on what their replies were. The communications were being made to every Muslim on earth.

The overwhelming responses from the Islamic people were "death to the infidels" and other similar phrases. 85% of Egyptians, 90% of Iranians, 95% of Saudi Arabians, 80% of Iraqis, 70% of Kuwaitis, and similar high percentages from Muslim peoples elsewhere on earth were applauding the deaths of Americans.

For several years the People of the United States have been bending over backwards trying to establish friendship ties with the Muslim world but to no avail. The Imams and Mullahs had continually succeeded in convincing their followers that the "west" was evil and of the devil. Like with their hate of Israel, a substantial amount of Muslims wanted all US citizens to die. The hate really grew and festered after the Big Change when the People seized property from American Muslims with wealth over \$50 million and from foreign Muslims with ownership of US real estate, stocks, and other property. At that point in time their ownership represented 20% or more of America. Some of their major holdings included Saks Fifth Avenue, Tiffany's, Carvel Ice Cream, Gucci, Color Tile, AT&T, Chrysler, Dow Chemicals, Atlantic Richfield, Santa Fe International, Citibank, Texaco refineries, gas stations in 33 states, United Press International, AOL, Chase Manhattan, Compaq, First Chicago Corp. JP Morgan, Peterbilt Trucks, Transamerica, Church's Chicken, Fox News, and hundreds more like the Beverly Hills Hotel. Their shadow holdings of real estate and corporations were shocking once the People found out.

As they were watching the screen in the situation area, a barrage of votes started pouring in from across America. The voting base was at 177 million people. The final questions requiring a super majority vote (66% of voters) given this potential scenario that turned actual was... if, who, where, when, and how to protect ourselves from the enemy. With 170 million people

voting, it was decided by 160 million US citizens to completely blanket bomb Iran with nuclear weapons. To turn Iran into glass. The when was immediately.

Larry looked at the screen and then to himself quietly said "It's done. The people of Iran don't exist anymore." The People then decided any Islamic country where over 50% of the people want the People of the US destroyed will also be bombed completely. The remaining Muslim countries, except for places like open minded and multi-faith embracing Morocco and the Kurdish/Yadizi region of northern Iraq and the countries of Turkey and Bosnia, will have cruise missiles and drones deployed to destroy every mosque and every Muslim cleric. The order was effective immediately. Then the People sent a request to the people in every country on earth to please banish or execute all Muslims clerics that are hell bent on destroying the rest of us. A list of these people with their physical and GPS addresses was sent to the people in every country. God bless the worldwide NSA spying infrastructure set up years ago.

The people of Russia, South America, the Northern Atlantic region, and North America already had agreements to supply the rest of the World with oil in case this scenario occurred.

Larry and the group stayed in the situation area from morning through late evening. At 1950 hours, Larry turned to the group and said "Let's hope there won't be any more [CBRN](#) problems." He continued "It appears that almost all of the enemy on our streets have been taken out." Larry looked around the room and saw everyone was tired. He stood up on a chair and said "Please pray for those who died from the terrorist attacks..... We've had an uncountable number of heroes who took to the streets to kill these demons. And many of them have died. Please pray for them and for those few who are still fighting!and thank God we have an armed America! It's done... Let's go home. Go home and be with your families."

[PAUSE...](#) Take a break..... Maybe get a snack or something to drink.....Are you ready?

(Please play this [music](#) and read the paragraph slowly.) A year had passed since the attack..... Norma was moving in a playful passionate rhythm during a deep beautiful dream..... She was smiling at Larry through her ancient smoky green Latina eyes while holding him as they glide across the dance floor in tender loving movements..... The floor was packed as the orchestra played but Norma didn't see anybody but her man... As they swayed to the music Larry was completely consumed by her enchanting smile and fragrant intoxicating touch. Together they come closer and their lips met... She smiled and pulled him even closer. The sound of the music evaporated while the throbbing rhythm still remained as warm inviting pressing lips brought their bodies and spirits together as one in the ecstasy of the moment. It was so real... so captivating... and so wonderful..... She wished this moment would last forever.....

Then the alarm went off next to Norma's bed. Ringggggggggg. "Dammit!..... I hate that clock..... Connie, Sophia, Nellie wake up. Hurry. Get dressed. Today's the day." Nellie was the first to jump out of bed. "Finally I get to ride the roller coaster again like mom promised." Connie and Sophia begged "I don't wanna get up. Just a few more minutes. Ok?" Norma walked over their bedrooms and pulled the covers down and said "Not today, girls. Today's very important. You've got 30 minutes to get cleaned up and dressed. All of you

packed your suitcases, right?" "Yes, mom." "They'll be here soon to pick us up." At 7:30am a silver unmarked Chrysler minivan with dark tinted windows pulled into the driveway. A casually dressed agent walked up to the door and rang the bell. Norma opened the door and the man smiled and said "Ms. Corona." "Yes." "My name's Gerry and it's an honor to meet you, ma'am. We'll be waiting in the vehicle." "Thank you" replied Norma. Moving quickly past Norma were the girls running to the van wearing brightly colored summer outfits including scarves around their necks. Norma said "Wow, girls. You're really anxious to hit the slides, aren't you?" Standing at the open van door Sophia yelled "Hurry mom, we're burning daylight." The agents were laughing as Norma got in. She handed them the house keys and the garage door opener. They're staying at her home until she and the kids return. Norma said "I made sure you guys have lots of food and plenty to drink. Please don't break anything, and be sure to clean up behind yourselves. Ok?" "Yes Ma'am." They drove to a distant corner of a large parking lot about a mile away. Sitting on the pavement was a fully armed Blackhawk waiting for its precious cargo. The lighthearted co-pilot standing next to the bird said "You ordered a taxi, ma'am?" Norma chuckled "Oh great...a million comedians are out of work, and you're trying to break into the business." She turned back and Connie was running past her jumping in first. She leaned over to the pilot and asked "Can I help you fly it? I'm a quick study." He smiled and said "Maybe next time. Put your suitcases in the back and buckle up. And after we close the doors, you can take the scarves off your faces. Nobody can see you inside the chopper." After everybody was settled in, the co-pilot checked the seatbelts and said "You guys ready to have some fun?" The three girls yelled out, "You bet!" "Of course!" "Let's do it!" Then the pilot said "Ok, let's put on some flying [music](#) and hit the skies, ladies." As the chopper was slowly rising a few people on the ground were watching and waving. Larry sent the Blackhawk as a security measure. Since Norma was seeing him, she was vulnerable. So he moved her to another address and another job. She and her girl's real identities became invisible in every database. He didn't want any bad guys to find out where she lived or where she worked. As they were coming into the DC area the co-pilot pointed out landmarks in the city. They flew by the Smithsonian. Then they passed by the Pentagon, then the Capitol building which is now being used as a learning center for special needs children. Then over the White House. The pilot said it was currently undergoing some modifications to house orphaned children looking for stable and caring parents. On their approach to the Bed & Breakfast they saw the mammoth sized Peoples Monument and Museum in the distance. Finally, the pilot alerted the automated traffic controller at the B&B. The beacon and glide slope flipped on. And after one wide circle around the B&B, the chopper safely came down on the tarmac.

It was 9:00am when three bouncy excited kids once again piled out of a vehicle at their favorite Bed and Breakfast. "Mom, we want our room to face the waterslides. Think you can swing that?" asked Connie. "Already did, mija." Norma walked up to Jack at the customer service counter and said "Hi, my name is Nora Navarro and I have a reservation." "It's ok, Ms. Corona, all the employees here have security clearances from the People's DoD. Your room is ready and these men will help you with your luggage." "Men?" "Yes ma'am. They're here with the People's secret service to follow along in the background during your time here in DC." Norma smiled and said "Don't tell me, Larry, right?" Jack said "Yes ma'am, and he wanted me to give you this."

Norma opened the hand written letter and it said "Hi, Babe. Cletus wanted to make sure you're safe. I know. You can hold your own just fine. But having them there makes Cletus feel better. Thanks. See you soon. xoxo. Ps, I told Cletus last month that I was checking in that B&B so we could be close. He scoped out the place and discovered it was a popular hangout for congressmen and the president. Years ago the owner put in a secure bunker with automatic ordnance deployment in case of any problems. It looks like you're staying at the safest B&B in DC. So Cletus got others like Edward Snowden, Larry Ellison, and Bill Gates to stay there too." Norma smiled and breathed a sigh. "Ok guys, let's go. It's room 306." "Yes ma'am. The Agency has checked the premises and did background checks on the entire guest list. You'll be just fine." Norma glanced at one of them and said "Of course I will. Connie, Sophia, Nellie. Let's go to our room."

As they were walking, an agent next to Connie looked down at her and said "You don't remember me, do you?" Connie smiled up at him and said "Of course I do. You picked Nellie up like a little ragdoll and carried her out of the building that night. How you been? I see you're still huge." Then she laughed and poked his stomach a few times "Looks like you better start cuttin back on that fried chicken and enchiladas." He laughed and said "You're probably right. See... I'm the muscle and Frank over here... He's the speed. He tackles em and then I sit on em." Connie laughed and then pointed to her head and said "Si, nalgon (*literally means large butt, but it refers to a person who moves slowly*). Pensando con tu culito gordo, guey (*You're thinking with your little fat butt, dude*)."

Norma overheard and said "Connie, no digas cosas como esas. Portate bien, canija." (*don't say things like that. Behave, you rascal*.) "Ok, mom."

Little Nellie looked up and smiled at the big agent and said "Thank you for saving me." He smiled back and said "Since you were the smallest, it made you a perfect target so I personally chose to guard you that night." Nellie said "I've grown a lot in a year, haven't I?" He laughed and said "You sure have Nellie. I don't know if I could pick you up anymore." Nellie had a vexed look on her face and said "Mister, you could pick three of me up right now if you wanted to." She beamed and proudly stated "I'm going into third grade now, so it's a little harder to bullshit me." Connie scolded "Evalina, where did you learn that expression?!" "From you." The big security agent just rolled his eyes. (*Columbia's favorite young singer, Shaira Selena, who looks like Sophia has a [sister](#) that looks just like little Nellie.*)

As the elevator door opened on the third floor and the crew was heading to their room. Connie starts running and yelled out "Hey, girl! What you doin here." She ran up and almost pushed Lupe down hugging her. "We wanted to surprise you. Surpriiiiiise!" Connie said "You told me you couldn't make it." "I lied." Tony was standing there too and hugged Norma and the kids. Norma reached over and pinched Tony's cheek and said "Que chulo! (*Chulo in Mexican slang refers to someone who is cute, hot, good looking etc. It can be used to describe almost anyone and is not related to sexual attraction though it can be.*) I didn't think it was possible but you're even more handsome than before, Tony." "Ay, flattery will get you everywhere, chica. You're looking pretty buff yourself, girl." Lupe looked at Connie and said "The surprise isn't over. Guess who checked in yesterday." Connie said "Nooo." Lupe said "Yessss. Austin and Hanna are here. You already knew Travis was coming. Everybody's here! And my buds, Tracy and Molly are here so you'll finally get to see them for reals in person. Connie said "Well don't just stand there. Let's everybody get our swimsuits on and do some serious water sliding!"

The kids kept in close contact all year long. And now they finally get to be together again. The day before, Bubba and Austin drove to Houston then flew out with Laurie and Travis to Dulles airport in DC. Then they jumped on a chopper to the bed and breakfast. Tony and Lupe are living just outside of Las Cruces so she can work with Mark and Elon's team at the [White Sands research complex](#) buried beneath the Organ Mountains just east of the city. So Tony, Lupe, Mark, Hanna, Elon, his wife Talulah, and his five boys Damian, Saxon, and Kai (12yr old triplets) and Xavier and Griffin (14yr old twins) took a Boeing 737 escorted by two F/A-18 Hornet fighter jets to Dulles. Lupe works with two extraordinary girls her own age named Tracy and Molly. They with their parents also traveled with the group to DC. From Dulles they choppered out in a CH-47 Chinook escorted by two Apache attack helicopters to the Bed and Breakfast. Because Elon, Mark, Lupe, Tracy, and Molly were travelling together it was mandatory they be under heavy protection because the human cargo was way too precious.

It was 10:00am on a beautiful Saturday morning. Music was softly [playing](#) in the background. There was a warm gentle summer breeze blowing in from the south. Norma was lying on a soft chase lounge next to the crystal blue swimming pool. She was wearing a cute brightly colored bikini that accentuated her toned petite physique and her beautiful caramel colored skin. She was sporting a big white floppy hat and was enjoying a book while her munchkins were having the time of their lives going up and down and up and down. Perpetual motion mixed with screaming pleasure. Jack put in another slide ride this year. It's a hundred feet high and requires an elevator to get to the top. To prevent kids from falling out, it's a clear tube that dives almost straight down, then swirls to the right then to the left and finally rises at the end to shoot the person out into the air five feet above the landing pool. Every few minutes you could hear the loud scream of someone flying through the air before skimming onto the water.

"Hey Norma, long time no see. How are you?" It was Bubba and Laurie walking out with their sons. Norma stood up and hugged them. Then the two boys ran off to the large pool area to do some water sliding. Norma said "Here, pull up some lounge chairs and catch some of this nice morning sun." The pool waiter came by and asked if they would like something to drink. "I'll be right back with your three sweet teas." said the attendant. During the past year Norma kept in contact with the group, mostly via text messages and Facebook. Laurie asked "So Norma, just how serious is it between you and Larry. The paparazzi seem to think you're quite a couple." Norma responded "Yeah, I know. Larry is one of the finest men I've ever known. He's very loving and caring. Our relationship is about the same since I last texted you. He lives in another city and we see each other when we can. Like I told him, when we're together we have lots of fun, and he loves me like a woman should be loved. I'm very happy and he's good with my kids. But I never want anything to happen like it did last year. Especially with my girls."

Laurie said "Norma, I don't know if it was blind luck or Divine Providence, but if Larry hadn't been with us we could have been part of the 1,500 people that died that evening." Norma said "I know, and I think about that every day." Bubba said "That attack woke America up. Like a cold slap in the face, all of us realized we had something very near and dear to us. Something that day we resolved to keep. Our Freedom. I believe the rest of the world totally understands that now." Norma looked at both of them and said "All that talk sounds good but the bottom line is I just want to be safe. And I do know we're safer because of that attack. Larry, Serge, Mark, and the rest of our army of technology geeks along with our military have made our country a lot

safer. But apparently these "Pioneers" are like magnets for terrorists. Don't you remember me telling you about another attempt on his life six months ago?" Laurie said "Right, and all the members of the group were identified and eliminated before they could do anything. Our borders are completely sealed now. And, we've polygraph interviewed all Muslims in America and thrown the questionable ones out. Today I feel much safer on the streets. There's like one camera for every person in Houston. Six million cameras going day and night running facial recognition and license plates. Not to mention the GPS on every phone and in every vehicle. If a person goes outside, our system will see them and determine if they are a potential threat. If so, they're immediately apprehended. We know exactly where everybody is at all times now. And it's because of that terrible night and the next day. The People won't allow it to happen again."

Laurie continued, "Actually, Norma, our group is very lucky because we understand more than most. Our group represents what didn't exist before the Big Change. You came from a very rough Hispanic and Black neighborhood in Newark where the people were living hand to mouth every day. Tony and his daughter were homeless living on the streets struggling just to live another moment, and then later they took Lupe away from him. I came from a middle class family that had the money to put me through college so I could have a decent job. Bubba was a millionaire with an engineering degree from Texas A&M but people wouldn't have thought it by looking at this big old farm boy. And then there's Larry, Serge, and Mark. They were billionaires many times over before the Big Change. They had the best of everything. Our worlds and their worlds never crossed. It was like a rich White family from Connecticut would never go into a Black neighborhood in Newark because they didn't understand something very simple..... And that is all people, no matter who they are cry, laugh, eat, worry, and die. [\(click\)](#) We're all the same! The Big Change gave America the opportunity to understand that about each other. In a very casual way, the Big Change allowed us to come together as a group of completely diverse people. We liked what we saw and we became friends. And with our own special abilities we helped each other survive during our time of need. It was a defining moment where we all stood together as one."

Norma said "You're right. The rich don't have a monopoly on happiness anymore. And the People put ourselves on a level playing field so we can interact as equals. That's all true. And I know that with Freedom comes risk. And I know Larry and them are working to control that risk to make it as low as possible. But..... the memories of that night and the next day still haunt me." Laurie paused for a moment, then she sat down close to Norma on her chase lounge and said "Come here girl." She hugged Norma and whispered "Me, too."

After a few minutes Tony walked out with a white linen towel over his forearm carrying a silver serving tray with frosted glasses of iced tea. He smiled "Somebody ordered some teas?" Norma looked up and chuckled "Hola, guapo. *(Hello, handsome)* It's about time you brought those teas out." Laurie jumped up and gave Tony a big hug and a kiss on the cheek. "Glad to see you could make it, Tony." Bubba stood up and gave him a big bear hug. "How you been, Tony. And, where's your daughter?" "Doing great, Bubba. Lupe came out early to do water sliding. I don't have to ask how Austin is doing. Lupe's been talking about him a lot lately." Bubba said "She's been keeping up with how Austin's been doing in the junior weekend rodeos. Your daughter wants to do [barrel racing and breakaway roping](#)." Tony said "Yeah, we had to sweeten the pot

by getting her a horse and a big chunk of land so she would continue working with Mark. All her spare time now is spent riding." "That's what I've been hearing. Sit down and relax, buddy. Looks like we're going to be here for a while."

As Tony was relaxing on a chase, he took a sip of his iced tea, looked over at Norma and said "Whatcha reading?" Norma said "It's "1984" by George Orwell. I always wanted to read it, but never had the time. In 1949 his is prediction of "Big Brother" trying to control us in [1984](#) actually happened. It just took a few decades longer. What he couldn't see was "Big Brother really got his butt kicked by the Big Change." She snickered as she continued with the book.

Norma stopped reading for a minute and said "After I finish this book I'm going back to reading some more of [Zitkala Sa](#). (*Zit kala sha*) She was a Dakota/Lakota Sioux Indian born February 22, 1876 on the Yankton Indian Reservation in South Dakota. Years ago her writings helped me understand that there are other ways to live our life. And they can be better. Her prose was so strong and beautiful that she made me feel I was sitting right next to her on the train as it traveled to the land of red apples. I felt the excitement, apprehension and sorrow of her new life at the school. I was there experiencing in her little 8 year old mind the fears and confusion as the White people at the school stripped her of her hair, native clothing, language, and culture. I believe she mastered the White man's language so she could speak out for an eternity about people who conquer, take and destroy. Her nation was a society that had respect for each other and respect for mother earth. They were more of what you would call a "gift society" where all people work together and support each other to have a good life. Way before the Europeans invaded and took over their lands these were a happy, proud, and honorable people. I really liked one of her short stories called "A Warrior's Daughter". Besides showing the incredible love an Indian woman can have for her man, she also has you understand the significance of the concept of a tribe. A tribe, if necessary, could be completely ruthless to outsiders. But members within a tribe were always treated with dignity, respect, kindness, and caring. I believe this is hardwired into our DNA. If you are considered a member of the tribe or family the feeling of oneness among you is very strong. Almost three years ago Americans were finally convinced that all of us are part of the same tribe so we voted for the Big Change. The few billionaire oppressors lost their control and the herd finally trampled the few predators who were feasting on our labors." Surprised, Tony looked at Norma and said "Wow Norma, this is a side of you I've never seen. I like it."

She continued "My blood is North American Indian, so I'm curious what she has to [say](#) about God. Frankly, I don't believe in organized religion." Tony asked "Why not?" Norma looked at Tony in the eyes and slowly said "Because one day God confided in me that he's an atheist." Tony smiled and said "Spoken like a true Human (*Indian*), using circular logic to show a closer kinship to the Great Spirit." He said "It's interesting. I'm a full blooded member of the Comcáac (*phonetically - komcok*) Nation. Outsiders call us [Seri](#) Indians. My parents were from Desemboque, Sonora, Mexico. Dad said their family was originally from Tiburon Island. And, [Lupe looks](#) a lot like my people." Norma smiled and said "I've always felt there was some kind of an ancient connection between us, Tony." He laughed and said "For over a thousand years our tribe was known to have the fiercest warriors. Worse than the Apache. After watching you fight a year ago I'd definitely say there's a connection." Norma rolled her eyes, and said "Just don't get me upset." Tony laughed.

Bubba got Tony's attention and commented, "Austin said he likes Lupe's horse." Tony grinned and responded "She was real picky choosing her. It infuriated Lupe when her mother's family used to call her half-breed." Bubba said "You must have married her mother for her looks, right?" Tony grinned "Right, she was drop dead beautiful. Anyway, Lupe says a good horse is half the dream so she wanted what she called a perfect breed for a horse. She searched and searched until she found one that was part Paint, Appaloosa, English Thoroughbred, and Arabian. She named her Mother Earth, or Mom for short because her blood is from all over the world. Lupe has taught her lots of tricks like the horse in the movie "Hidalgo"." Bubba asked "What does she look like?" "She looks like a Paint with Appaloosa spots and an Arabian shaped head." Bubba said "You guys need to bring Mom next month to the San Antonio Livestock Show and Rodeo. Lupe would love it. You can stay with us, and Austin would introduce her to all of his rodeo friends." "Sounds like a lot of fun," said Tony, "Oh, and Lupe told me they're bringing the Junior Finals back to Gallup, New Mexico next year. She said she has a year to cut her time down to less than fifteen and a half seconds for barrel racing. Maybe competing in San Antonio would help get her some good experience." Bubba responded "With her iron like ambition, I can see her doing anything she wants." They both laughed and agreed.

Lupe was already at the pool before Connie and the gang arrived. Her friends and work associates Molly and Tracy were with her. They were coming down the big curly swirly slide as Connie was walking up. "Hey, Connie, look at me doing the swirly. Yeehaa..." Then she and her buds went splashing into the water. They jumped out of the water and walked up to Connie. "Connie, this is what Tracy and Molly look like in real life." Connie smiled, bumped fists with them and said "Finally we get to meet in person. It's like we're practically sisters with all the dance practice we've been doing on Skype. So how's Las Tres Bandidas doing." Molly laughed and said "Yeah, that's what Lupe calls us because we are always shaking things up and cutting across the grain." Lupe said "The other kids at high school are still trying to understand what the hell is going on with us. And our teachers say we're too brash and precocious because we're always correcting them." Tracy smiled and said "Lupe here is the clown, and Molly is everybody's friend, and my nickname is the "Peacemaker". Lupe named me after the old Colt .45 single action pistol." Connie said "Yeah, you told me about busting a huge senior football player in the face knocking his front teeth out." Tracy laughed and said "That was my first day at that school. I sort of lost it that day. My mentors told me to tone it down a little. I'm supposed to be a *girly girl that needs a big strong boy to protect me*. It's the perfect cover." Connie observed "Well you certainly don't look like a butt kicking machine. My mom's the same way. They say dynamite comes in small packages." Tracy said "Your mom did it the natural way. Lots of hard work and an attitude. My abilities are enhanced with chemicals. But we don't want to talk about that right now." As Connie's little sisters were walking up she said "As you've already seen on Skype these are my two sisters, Sophia and Nellie." They all exchanged greetings and off they went to have some fun with the slides.

A while later at the pool's edge near a slide, Molly and Tracy and Lupe, with Austin happily in tow, ran over to Connie. "Connie, there they are with their beautiful step mother, [Talulah](#)." It was Elon's five boys all with matching color coordinated swimsuits, shades, flip flops, and towels. Like they just stepped out of a kid's version of GQ magazine." Connie looked around until she spotted Sophia. "Sophia, come here." Sophia and Nellie walk up as Connie was

pointing over to the Musk triplets. Sophia said "Yeah, I saw them earlier inside the B&B. The pretty boys were walking around like their poop don't stink. Not interested." Then she and Nellie ran back to find Travis so they could go on the new scary slide. Connie said "That's my sister. She's not into conceited pretty boys. She wants to be powerful and have fun. Reminds me of that old video by Katy Perry called [Roar](#)." Lupe cracked up laughing and said "Yeah, the triplets are a little conceited. The twins aren't bad. But they're fourteen and you're thirteen." Connie said "So?" Fifteen year old Austin who was over six feet tall and 185 pounds of solid muscle with blue eyes and sun bleached hair gave the girls a big Texas smile and said "How about some more slide rides, ladies?" Lupe grabbed his arm and said "Let's go, Cowboy."

[Digression](#)

During the past year, Lupe has proven herself as the most valuable component of Mark and Elon's space travel team. When she first started she wolfed down all the information she could about the project. After months of absorbing information, she took a week off to relax and do some mountain climbing with her dad.

It was March 15th and unusually warm in Las Cruces this year. Spring came quickly in the high Chihuahuan desert. Two weeks ago the area had a bunch of rain. About 6 inches over eight days. Now the desert was alive with new growth and blooming cactus flowers. Lupe and Tony set up base camp at [Aguirre Springs Recreation Area](#) which is at the foothills on the east side of the [Organ Mountains](#). On their first climb they reached one of the summits directly up from the camp site. At the top, she and her dad were able to look out across the desert floor. They were sitting on the spine of the mountain looking south west. To the south in the distance, about thirty five miles away, were the Franklin Mountains and the city of El Paso. It was midmorning and the sky was clear blue. Way down in Las Cruces, the People's bank at the corner of East Lohman and South Telshore was displaying a temperature of 65 degrees. It was ten degrees cooler on the spine. Because of the intensity of the climb, Tony and Lupe could feel their bodies throbbing to the beat of their heart as they sat down and were relaxing on a ledge. Tony said "Look there, mija." as he was pointing over to the cliffs on the left. Lupe said "I see, papi. It's a bald eagle nesting on the rocks. I wonder if she has babies yet." The majestic eagle flew off the side of the mountain and was heading down to something. "Papi, I'll bet they can see rabbits in the desert from here." "That's true, they can."

Tony also said "Like I was talking about as we were climbing, when it starts to get warm in the early spring at this time of day especially after a big rain, you can see the old Butterfield trail. My dad showed it to me when I was your age. See, Mija..... It's that dark green line that stretches across the desert to El Paso. See, its straight down from where the eagle is flying." "I see it, papi. A thin green line. I can't believe that 150 years later the cow poop is still fertilizing the desert so the grass will grow thicker." Tony laughed and said "Isn't it amazing. Must have been a lot of steers pulling a lot of wagons to have that much poop."

It was a beautiful morning with a cool crispness in the air. Lupe sat silently for a while as she watched the soaring eagle looking for food. Everything was so quiet and peaceful. There was no sound except for a slight breeze blowing by from time to time. The hairy [tarantula](#) and the "[horny toad](#)" sunning themselves on the rocks to the left seemed to be enjoying the bright sun and fresh morning air, too.

Lupe looked out into the blue sky and commented about some things she's learned over the past seven months. "Papi, they taught me that all waves travel at the speed of light. That's radio, TV, infra-red, visible, x-rays, gamma-rays, all electromagnetic waves. Some people say waves are particles and some say they're just energy. I say they're special kinds of particles. And if they are particles moving on a sine curve then the shorter period waves have particles moving much faster than say radio waves since they all move laterally at 186,000 miles a second. But they couldn't tell me if waves eventually run out of energy and stop. And if they don't run out of energy then isn't that perpetual electromagnetic motion that all scientists say is impossible."

[Maxwell's equations](#) are cool, but what's interesting is nobody can tell me why it's 186,000 miles a second and not double or half that. And how are light photons instantly accelerated from dead stop to that speed. Or what if I were able to slow or speed up electromagnetic waves. Could that be part of a gateway to another dimension that quivers at a different rate? It's pathetic that even today we are limited to observations and conclusions on electromagnetic energy from the 1800s. I tell the Phds in their twenties at the research facility that surely we can create instruments to control in some degree or manner the linear speed of waves. Their only response is: "Don't call me Shirley." Then they laugh at me. They think they're so damn smart when all they can do is memorize and parrot it all back.

Papi, if my horse gets outside the fence all I have to do is entice it back with some molasses coated grain. I understand what appeals to her the most and I use it to influence her. These Phd guys would make a big production out of getting my horse back by getting other horses with riders and ropes, and maybe some 4 wheelers, and maybe a small herding helicopter. By then my horse would have run off out of sight. What I'm saying is first you have to get your butt out of a classroom and work with the stuff you're investigating. Second, be creative. Really creative. Think about stuff like nobody has before. Go beyond the familiar. Get out there and get your hands dirty. And always remember that laws are made to be broken. That's especially true with science. When I tell the guys with Phds in physics that, they think I'm really nuts. But Uncle Elon and Uncle Mark don't.

"You know when I was younger time seemed to go very slow compared to now. That's because my mind was moving much faster. Like it was oscillating faster. The length and speed of the oscillations were the cognitive determinate that I subconsciously used to judge or compare outside movement or the change of things. So there was a relationship. The magic is the capability to bridge and compare those movements or changes against my mind's oscillations. In other words when I was very little it seemed like forever before you got home from work. Now it doesn't seem so long. I believe in bridges of cognition, papi. These are the things we need to understand more about. In other words I think the true definition of time is consciousness and not just a measure of movement. Stuff can be happening all around me, but I can't tell unless I'm aware of it. That's the magic."

"I think it's when you get farther away from movement, you get closer to understanding what time really is. It's a kind of perfect balance and harmony. A perfect awareness. It's when you fuse the past with the present and the future as one instant, but yet an eternity. I wish we could somehow step out of the event of this reality and be able to move around the slices of the past

and also into the future. If only we could step out and jump back in. Kind of like the old fashioned music record. It's spinning and the needle is resting at a certain spot playing the music. But somehow I just know there's a way to lift that needle up and move it somewhere else on the record. Papi, when I was a little girl and had déjà vu you explained to me it was our mind seeing into the future. I actually saw things unfold exactly as I had dreamed. And every once in a while it still happens, but not as much. It's what our ancestors did on their vision quests." "That's right, mija," responded Tony.

"And there's this thing called entropy in the second law of thermodynamics. To me entropy doesn't mean moving into randomness or disorder. Order could actually be a stilted state of things, or a forced contrived existence or equilibrium. An obvious example is antimatter hydrogen. Pure entropy could actually mean the natural relaxed state of things in our universe. I think it's a pure consonance, a sort of resonant symmetry of all things. In other words I think equilibrium can exist in several states. Pure entropy could be the final state of equilibrium. Some scientists say when the entire universe reaches pure entropy, everything will go dark because there will be no more energy and everything will cease to exist. To me, that's taking a huge leap because it's based only on what we know. Humans exist because of chemical energy in a liquid water environment. But the true definition of life can be way more than the energy flow in our bodies. What I mean is sentient beings can be a whole lot more. Just because our instruments can't detect the other different types of life, it doesn't mean they're not there. We've got to stop focusing exclusively on matter and energy. We've got to think out of the box. Abundant life could exist in pure entropy, just not the kind of life we visualize life to be."

"Michael Faraday and Nicola Tesla, were incredible people who were the ground breakers to what I want to do. The real forces that bring about electromagnetic energy is the stuff I want to know about."

Lupe continued "And, there's more out there than we know, like all the characteristics of and reasons for [Dark Matter](#) and [Dark Energy](#). And the simple way I can tap you on the shoulder with my mind, papi. I know it's not wave energy that does that. It's something else. And when they told me you died I didn't believe it because I felt you were still alive. And like I talked to you about before, what about the dog named Bobby that got separated from his family while they were moving 2,000 miles away from their original home. In six months he found them. And [cats](#) do [that](#) too. There are invisible threads of something we don't yet know about.

But getting back to $E=MC$ squared... in a frictionless space without any points of reference how does mass know it's travelling fast versus slow. And I believe that mass is nothing but little bits of energy that has found a way to be in equilibrium. Like a tug of war where both sides are equal strength. Mass doesn't have to move to release energy. You just need to disrupt its bonds. Or the opposite when you break covalent bonds it absorbs energy." She laughs and looks at her dad as she's shaking her head and said "So many questions, such little time." Tony hugs her and laughs too.

.....Then Lupe's eyes brightened. "Dad, what if outer space were like the desert floor. In the hot dry summer, you can't see the Butterfield trail because the grass has withered. But you can see it now because there's a marker. With your eyes you can look out into outer space and either see

nothing or see objects that give off visible light waves. But there's more to see. We invented instruments to detect all kinds of waves passing by. But right now we can only detect waves which means we can only detect movement. But what if there's stuff out there that doesn't move because to be in equilibrium all it has to do is stay still. Or to be in equilibrium they vibrate at incredibly high rates without giving off any waves as we know them. Or the stuff is so small, we can't yet detect them. And making it more interesting, I don't think they're particles or energy. This dark matter may even be the core of life itself. And what if there are points in this dark matter that are like stitches that hold the electromagnetic part of our universe together. And the only way to see them is through highly sensitive receptors, like the eagle's eyes. But these receptors won't be made to detect heat, or gravity, or waves as we currently define them. They will detect harmony." Tony says "Harmony? You mean music?" Lupe said "Sort of. Like when you go into a room and play a flute. There's a certain note when it's played you can hear it's in harmony with the room. I've done it with an infinite pitch sound generator. As you're going up the scale you can actually hear when it hits equilibrium within the space. I think I know how to make a harmony detector. It will detect a special kind of harmony within dark matter that will be the stitches where time is fused with energy."

"Like the bilateral mirror symmetry of humans, the theory of chirality could be applied to these areas of perfect harmony in our universe. There could be a point of left-handed chirality at a particular place in space with a right-handed mirror point somewhere else and a four dimensional thread of fused "time/energy" could be connecting them. But instead of opposite spins I believe there would be opposite harmony. And maybe I can direct or move the right-handed mirror point." "Mija, you're talking way over my head right now." "No, but daddy, it's very simple. It makes total sense. We don't need to travel far out into space to find one of these points. They're all around us. We just need to make something to see where they're located, including the fused temporal threads. And, I know just how to do it. And, I think something similar to a Faraday cage will carry us from point A to mirror point A instantly. And maybe we won't even need that." Then she winked at Tony, pointed to her head and said "Si, papi, con las nalgas." (*Yes, daddy, with my butt.*) (*this physical and verbal expression combined, literally means 'very stupid thinking'. But in this context Lupe used it as a satirical way of speaking in reverse. Since she said it in Spanish it was also a lament about racism against Mexican Americans. With a happy attitude and in a few words she was angrily saying: 'Many believe all Mexicans are stupid, worthless, and lazy. But, we're not!'*) That cracked Tony up and he said "That's good baby, you show them how my little homeless half-breed can make a machine to instantly travel through space." They both laughed and hugged. And in one month she did exactly that. Now it's the first few days in July. So in just a matter of months she has successfully teleported people across the galaxy and back. Lupe doesn't waste any time after she gets onto something.

[Back at the B&B](#)

Larry was at the B&B earlier that morning and had breakfast with Bubba, Laurie, Serge, Elon, Mark and their spouses/girlfriend and their kids. Then he and Serge ducked out for a few hours to do some last minute work at the museum. When they arrived back in the Blackhawk Larry had already changed into his swim trunks and headed straight to the pool to see Norma. As Norma was thoroughly enjoying her book, out of the corner of her eye she saw this tall skinny boney kneed man walking up in baggy bright blue swim trunks. Larry first greeted the others then he turned to Norma and said "How do you like my trunks?" As Norma hugged and tenderly kissed him hello, she said "You're trunks are nice, but it's that pasty white skin that needs some

serious sun, Baby." Larry replied, "I know. All work and no play." Norma said "That's why I'm here. For the last year I've shown you how to relax and have some good times. And you've given me the kind of love I've never experienced. Now slap on some of this suntan lotion and start turning brown."

Larry felt like the [luckiest man](#) in the world as he was laying out on a chaise longue next to this woman who was stunningly strong and beautiful both inside and out. She was deeply engrossed in that darned book. But then came the quick playful furtive flirtatious glances as she peeked at him through the book's pages which made him completely defenseless and longing for her touch. After a few minutes he handed her the lotion and coyly said "I need a little basting on my white tummy, could you slather some of that on to keep it a perfect cook?" Norma with her mesmerizing smoky green eyes laughed "You just want me to rub your cute little tummy. Are you like my old neighbor's cats who always wanted their [tummies](#) tickled?" Laurie said "Ok you two, let's keep it clean." Bubba added "Don't pay any attention to her. She's always rubbing my belly for good luck."And so the morning passed as the sunshine, the gentle summer breezes, and the iced tea were welcomed in this sanctuary of relaxation and friendship.

It was just after twelve noon when Lupe, Connie, and the rest of the kids ran over to the grownups and said "We're tired and hungry. Can we eat over at the Pirate's Restaurant?" Tony said "It's ok with me, but we need to shower off and put on some fresh clothes." The others agreed and they all went to clean up for lunch at 1:00. Lupe texted Hanna and also talked to the Musk boys to make sure they came too.

At 1:00 everybody gathered outside the restaurant. It was Larry, Norma, Connie, Sophia, Nellie, Tony, Lupe, Laurie, Travis, Bubba, Austin, Mark, Hanna, Serge, Elon, Talulah, Xavier, Griffin, Damian, Saxon, and Kai. There was also Tracy and her parents, and Molly and her mom. As the group entered, Norma said to the hostess, "Reservation for twenty six under Norma Corona." She said of course, Ms. Corona, please follow me. The hostess took them to a large private room. After they were seated the hostess recited the day's special and said everything they serve at this restaurant is fresh, delicious, healthy and wholesome. Tobi then came up and introduced herself to the group as their waitress. She looked at Norma and said "I remember being your waitress a year ago. I thought you were just a very nice mother of three precious little girls. I had no idea of who you really were until I saw clips of you protecting Mr. Page. It's an honor to be standing next to you." Norma, a little embarrassed, said "Thank you, Tobi." While Tobi was speaking to her, Norma remembered Tobi had an almost indiscernible limp. So after Norma thanked Tobi, she asked "You're a war veteran, aren't you?" Tobi blushed and said "I'm not here to talk about me." Elon said "That's ok, Tobi. What branch of service were you in. She looked at Elon and proudly stated she was with the 101st Airborne Screaming Eagles and did several tours in Afghanistan." Elon said "You're a purple heart recipient, aren't you?" Tobi was blushing even more and said "Yes, sir". Then Norma saw Tobi was wearing a gold necklace with the very tip of something [gold](#) poking out just above her dress neck line. Norma stood up and asked "I hope you don't mind." as she was pulling out the medallion at the end of her chain. As Norma gazed at the medal she was completely beside herself with Tobi's humility. Realizing what the medallion was Norma said "Tobi is a recipient of the Medal of Honor." It's an honor and a privilege to be standing with a person who demonstrated the highest level of exceptional courage and valor against impossible odds in time of war." Tears started welling up

in Tobi's eyes and said "I didn't mean for you to see that." Then she quickly tucked the medal under her neckline. Norma, realizing she made a gigantic blunder, softly said "Here, I'll take that." as she took the voice order recorder from Tobi's hand. Then Norma walked around the table with Tobi as she was composing herself and recorded what each person wanted to drink. Norma said "When you bring the drinks out, we want you to bring out your favorite beer for yourself. Then you can stand with us as we give a toast." Tobi said her boss, Jack, doesn't allow drinking alcohol while on duty. Norma said everybody here gives you permission, Tobi. Most warriors who come back have very mixed emotions about war. I'm not going to call you a hero, but we would be proud to have you to stand with us as we say a prayer and give a toast to the people who died a year ago. Tobi with some helpers quickly returned with the drinks. Norma stood up. With one hand holding her drink and her other arm around Tobi, she said "I'd like to say a prayer. What happened a year ago tomorrow was a tragedy that shouldn't have happened. But it did. I'd like to give thanks to all our People of the United States who took swift and immediate action to stop this from ever happening again. And may the souls of those who died be at peace with God in heaven. Amen." Everybody said Amen. "Ok, everybody," Norma continued with a smile, "[Life](#) is too [short](#) not to be happy. That's why we did the Big Change. So let's give a toast: To Life and Happiness, L'Chaim, a la vida y felicidad. I'm sure those who died would want tomorrow to be a day to pray, but the next day to be a day to play. Arriba, abajo, al centro y pa' dentro. Cheers everybody." They all took a long and happy drink. Norma turned to Tobi and quietly said "I see a good happy life ahead of you, Tobi. Thank you for your sacrifices and I apologize for not respecting your privacy." Then Norma kissed her on the cheek before she went on to another table to take their orders.

While they were waiting, Lupe was telling the Musk boys about the cookout they had in the back last year and how good her daddy's story was. Griffin said "Uncle Tony, you need to tell us that story sometime." Tony said "Of course, but it's only good when it's late at night and you can hear coyotes howling in the distance." Nellie said "It's so scary, you have to remind yourself it's only pretend." Connie, Sophia, and Travis all agreed. Then Tony said "But are you sure it was pretend?" "No Uncle Tony. Don't scare us like that," said Nellie. Lupe saw her eyes got really big, and laughed and replied "Don't worry, Nellie, rabbit men don't come this far north."

Tracy made an observation "I still can't get over this thing of calling everybody uncle." Lupe said "Tracy, you know we don't call everybody uncle, only those that we kids think deserve the honor of being called our uncle. It's part of our culture." Tracy scratched her head, "I still don't get it."

The restaurant had their world class chefs and staff preparing a wide variety of excellent cuisine. Tobi was back to take their orders. Elon asked if they could prepare his favorite dish of South Africa called Bobotie. She asked the chef using her wrist communicator. "He said that was one of his specialties." Elon was very impressed and ordered some. The rest of the group also went with dishes of their ethnic or regional origin.

The orders were out in about 20 minutes. As the group was enjoying their food they quickly discovered Elon was beside himself with enthusiasm over the recent discoveries in travel. And he wanted to tell the group all about it. Elon loved to talk. He was a perfect mix of genius, entrepreneur, and salesman. He said "Lupe was the one who showed us. We just provided the

tools and resources and a little guidance. At her direction of how and where, we metaphorically laid down the road and she was speeding as fast as she could on it. There were times where it was hard to keep up with her demands. Lupe calls it "Blinking" and the name stuck because in the near future we will be able to travel from one point to another as fast as a blink." Laurie said "Lupe, we didn't know about any of this, girl." Lupe said "Because of its sensitivity, we've been keeping it a deep dark secret. So I guess since Uncle Elon is bursting with so much excitement you're now the first ones to know about it."

Elon said "Lupe is receiving the highest national merit award for achievement tomorrow afternoon, so it's appropriate that all of you be the first to know." Then he started clapping and the rest of the group joined in. "Way to go," said Connie, "We knew you were working on something big girl, but don't let it go to your head. I'm not going to design a superwoman outfit for you anytime soon." Lupe smiled and made cross-eyes at Connie and they laughed. Mark said "Lupe looks, feels, and acts like a regular kid. That's what makes her so special. She believes that almost any kid her age, if given the tools can achieve great things." Lupe said "That's what my speech is going to be about tomorrow. The People have done a lot to do that but I think it's not enough. With Uncle Mark's help I'm kicking off a campaign to ask the People to allow us to have a program to provide more and better tools to all kids in all schools all across our country. Take my friend Connie for example. She can design outerwear that tickles the senses of color, movement, and feeling. She must have available at her fingertips the tools to bring her fashion ideas to life. See, as Uncle Elon says, every kid has very special qualities that need to be discovered and promoted." Everybody in the group wholeheartedly agreed.

Elon continued "I'm extremely pleased to say that tomorrow we will be giving the award for achievement not only to Lupe but to Tracy and Molly for their unbelievable groundbreaking work in the field of biology and communication using brainwaves." Molly interrupted and said "It's actually waves from the whole body and not just the brain." Elon said "I hear what you're saying, Molly, but I just can't understand it. Thank goodness you do." He continued "And there will be two other incredible people who will also be receiving the award. Their flights are arriving late today so they couldn't be with us. The five recipients will be given the distinction of being the first new Young Pioneers. Tracy here has done some great things with body strength and other miraculous stuff. And like I just said, I still can't wrap my head around how Molly can understand what people are thinking." Molly laughed and said "It's that but it's not really that, it's what the cells in their bodies are thinking. There's a difference." Elon said "See, already I'm confused. Anyway they are going to talk about their achievements tomorrow afternoon after the memorial and benediction." All the people in the group applauded.

Even though everybody during lunch was smiling and cheerful with each other, you could feel an underlying somberness. Near the end of the meal Sophia looked around and thought "We've got to get these old folks out of their funk." She said "So who's up for some pirate golf after lunch!" The Musk kids were the first ones to yell out. The adults slowly gave in.

While they were playing golf, Connie made sure she was next to the twins. Griffin took a liking to her, so they started competing against each other. As they moved through the holes, he made sure her score was higher. On the other hand, the triplets weren't used to the cold shoulder treatment Sophia was giving them. The triplets were very handsome kids, but Sophia was easily

twice as good looking. Elon quietly said to his triplets "What's the matter, the charm's not working? I think Sophia doesn't want to make Travis feel uncomfortable." Saxon said "Like she's worth our attention? I don't think so." Elon chuckled "Whatever."

Nellie was putting with Sophia and Travis. The triplets were behind them. Nellie said in a low voice to Sophia "I can't see why you don't like the triplets. They're cute...and funny." Sophia said "Just wait a few years when your understanding is better." Nellie fired back "I'm three years younger, but I'm still smarter than you, Sophia Fea." "I told you to never call me that, Smelly Nellie." Sophia looked over at Travis and sighed "Kids these days." Nellie got mad and yelled "Mo...om, Sophia's calling me smelly again." Norma looked over at the two of them and shook her head and said "Evalina and Sophia, be nice to each other. Compórtense!"

About half way through the course the kids started getting burned out like the last time they were there. So they cajoled the old folks to do some go-carting. When they got to the track, Sophia spotted the talking car and told Hanna about it. She convinced her to drive it. As Hanna was getting in the cart she heard "Ola my little cream delight. Are you ready to have my macho streamlined body take you for a fast ride?" "Sophia warned me about you, Feo (*ugly*)." "No, baby, my name is Guapo (*handsome*), and I'm here to grant your every wish." "Ok. I wish you'd shut the hell up. Let's see how you perform on the track, Mr. Big Words." "Your wish is my command, *mamacita*." "Shut up or I'll have my boyfriend come over and cut your wires off." "Calma te, *mija* (*mija can also be a term used by men attempting to flirt*). Let's keep my wires out of this. Are you buckled in and ready?" Hanna said "Yes. Let's go, Romeo." Like a year ago, old Romeo came in first to Hanna's delight. "Way to go fast boy. If you're nice I might come back again." "Ok, baby. Later." As they were leaving the track Norma walked next to Hanna and said "That car's a real jerk, isn't he." Hanna smiled and replied "You just have to know their tender spot and threaten to cut it off." They laughed.

It was late afternoon and Nellie told her mom she was tired and could she take a nap. Norma said "I'm with you, baby." Norma talked to the group and they decided to meet together at 7:00 for supper then maybe do some bowling. Six months ago Jack finished installing an underground twenty lane bowling alley. Everybody went back and took a nap. Then they had a nice evening meal together.

The bowling alley was back behind the restaurant underneath the basketball and tennis courts. It was 8:00 in the evening. Norma told the group she was going back to her suite because they had to wake up early tomorrow. Tony and Lupe also decided to go back. The rest of the group spent an hour bowling then they headed in.

[Late night casino fun](#)

Every Saturday night at 9:00pm most of the restaurant closes. Jack converts it over to a small casino with a roulette wheel, a dice table, blackjack and poker tables. His old poker pals still meet to play a few hands. It was 9:15 when they started rolling in. Moe I. Malyier, the ex-congressman, was the first to arrive. As he walked in Moe said to Jack "Hey man, talk about security. This place is like Ft. Knox. Security at the gate knew who I was, but they still insisted on doing a cavity search." Jack said "Why in the world would they do that?" Moe said "They told me I was a huge asshole in Congress, and they wanted to make sure there wasn't anything

up there." Jack laughed and said "You got to admit that's funny, Moe." Moe slowly sat down on a chair with a cushioned seat. "God, the sacrifices I make to play a little poker." A minute later Mario Consafo walked in. "Ola, tontolones (*hello suckers*). Ready to give me your money?" Jack said "Mario, glad to see you man. Let me get you a cold beer." Mario said "Just some cold water, Jack." Mario Consafo is their car mechanic. Like a good tailor once you find a great mechanic you never let him go. Mario also owns the best chauffeured limo service in town. He was also a managing partner of a Miami real estate development firm worth over a billion dollars. Mario's silent partners were various senators and congressmen in DC. But that's all ended. Then in through the door comes Scott Pelley. "Hey, hey, guys. The lover from Lubbock's here." Moe said "You mean droopy from DC. Come on in, little man." Scott said "Funny, Moe. You know some of the boys up front train at my gym. They told me about your escapade down under. I told them to always be sure and take enough rope and flashlights when they go searching in caves." Moe said "Ha ha, buddy." Scott used to do the national evening news for CBS. But now he's retired and owns a gym. Scott grew up in Texas, but you would have never known it with his on-air east coast highbrow attitude. His slick mendacity made him perfect for the job of reading the propaganda they used to call the news. He did pretty well for himself considering he dropped out of Texas Tech University with a low GPA in the heart of Red Neck country--Lubbock, Texas. What a hoot. Scott opened a beer and took a long swallow and sat down at the card table. "You guys want to warm up a little?" At that moment the omnidirectional helipad lighting system came on. Jack checked his security monitors. "Oh look, I'll bet that's Cindy. All she flies these days are Apaches with full armaments."

Years ago, so nobody would accuse them of being misogynistic, Cindy Steele was asked to be part of the group. Cindy was their "force protection". She may be a lady, but she can handily kick your butt. Having worked for 20 years in the military and retired as a two star general, Cindy worked for a large defense contracting firm making over \$5,000,000 a year. Her ties with her employer, Lockheed Martin, go back to when she was supervising government procurement groups that specialized in military hardware and cutting edge defense systems. Cindy used to spend most of her time on the Hill promoting Lockheed.

General Steele landed and got out. Her copilot then trucked the machine to a small hanger adjacent the pad. He stood guard next to it waiting for several soldiers to relieve him in a few minutes. The General had already reserved a room for her co-pilot. Since they had an important mission tomorrow, getting a good night's sleep was an order. After seeing the machine was secure she said "See you later, Bob. The Secret Service is all over this place. Make sure they don't touch the bird." "Yes Ma'am. Good luck." Cindy said "Thanks, and enjoy the Cuban." Cindy always makes sure her people are happy and well taken care of. Cindy was brought back into the military by request of the People. She's the commander of all air operations in the US.

The local head of the Secret Service group stepped up and introduced herself. They talked for a little while. She parted with "Let me know if you need anything, Ma'am." Cindy smiled and said "Do you like Cuban cigars?" "Yes, Ma'am, I do." "I knew you guys were going to be out here so I brought a few extra boxes. Pass them out to your people." "Yes, Ma'am and thank you. Good luck." "Thanks." Moments later Jack pulled up in his golf cart. "Hop in, general, we got some serious poker to play." Cindy said "Is Mario here." He smiled and said "Of course.

He likes easy money." Cindy said "Damn." Jack assured her "Don't worry, we'll get him tonight."

And finally, a little late as usual, Manny A. Moocher pulled up in a luxury limousine. Before the Big Change he was the lead investment banker at Bank of America Merrill Lynch. He was one of those guys who brought about the economic collapse of 2008 where millions of families lost their homes. Manny's a limo driver for Mario now. For a while he was forced to clean toilets for the new recruits at Lackland Air Force base. Mario found him and convinced the group that punished those who hurt Americans before the Big Change to give Manny 120 days incarceration with taser treatments 8 times a day. During the tasings, Manny would scream like a little girl. It was so blood curdling that they filmed it and used him in public service announcements about the value of staying out of jail. After Manny finished his sentence, Mario was allowed to hire him as a driver.

"Manny... Come on in and relax." said Jack. "Hi everybody. My last customer had me driving everywhere. I was lucky to get here at all." Cindy said "We know, Manny, and we still love you. Here, have a cigar and a beer. Pull up a chair." "Thank you," said Manny in a pathetically meek voice.

Jack smiled and said "Guess who else is coming to play cards with us tonight." Everybody replied "Who?" Jack continued "The ceremony tomorrow has brought Coleen Rowley, Edward Snowden, Ray McGovern, William Binney, Thomas Drake, and Chelsea Manning (formerly known as Bradley Manning) to my Bed and Breakfast. We'll set up two tables and players may move from one table to another as long as we keep both tables at six players. So if you're getting cold at one table, maybe you can convince a player at the other table to switch with you. Sound good?" They liked the idea. They did the same thing a couple months ago and the winnings seemed sweeter.

The late night waiter came out to take orders for hors d'oeuvres, snacks, and drinks. Manny said "I'll take a shrimp cocktail and a Cuba Libre." Mario said "Can you bring out a bowl with some trail mix." Cindy said "Some jalapeno poppers and a Bud sounds good." Scott said "I'll take the same." Moe said "Nothing for me, thanks." Barak, the waiter, said "I'll be right out with your orders." Then he hurried through the kitchen door. Jack said "You know, Obama took it hard at first, but after working here for a year he's done such a wonderful job we promoted him to head waiter." Cindy said "That's great. I knew he'd find something he was good at." The rest of the group agreed.

The guest players came in together. Everybody introduced themselves and randomly sat down. Obama heard the others arrive so he rushed out to take their orders. Snowden looked up at Barak and was surprised. Edward said "I didn't see you here earlier today." Obama said "No sir. I was getting some teeth work done. It's hard to find a good dentist these days. Or should I say one that won't put me under general and then pull all my teeth out and then kick me out to the curb." Obama smiled. "See, the pearly whites are still there." He laughed. Edward said "It's interesting how times have changed. I'll go ahead and have some nachos and a Budweiser. The rest of the whistleblowers got the same. Obama said "Yes sir, I'll be right out with your orders." Then he scurried back into the kitchen.

The whistleblowers, who now work in government fraud prevention, split up evenly between the two tables. Manny, Jack and Mario were at one table. And Cindy, Scott, and Moe were at the other. Mario was across from Edward. "Hey, Edward. You play much poker?" Edward said "While I was living in Russia I did. Cards and "voh DZYA ra" (*vodka*). I'd do some computer programming, they'd give me money and I'd give it back on the tables. But the vodka was free, so what the heck."

By 10:00pm Jack's makeshift Saturday night casino was filled with patrons. The roulette wheel and the craps table seemed to be the most popular. Jack and his group were off in a corner getting down and dirty with the cards. As the evening ended Edward was the top winner. Manny, Moe, and Jack were cleaned out. They closed early (midnight) because the next day was the ceremony at the museum. Cindy grabbed her knapsack with a change of clothes and wished everybody goodnight as she left to her room.

[Memorial service and benediction](#)

It was 6:30am when Norma's phone alarm went off. The alarm is a barking dog. "Would somebody tell that damn dog to shut up!" Norma cracked one eye open and realized it was the alarm. "I don't wanna get up. Oh, heck I gotta get up." "Connie, Sophia, Nellie. Come on, babes, get up, take a shower and get dressed. We have to leave soon."

At the B&B, twenty five fully armed Black Hawks were staged on the Tarmac near the helipad. Each bird had civilian seating for 8 people. The flight to the Peoples museum takes 10 minutes by air. General Steele's Apache was parked on the pad waiting to lead the group. There were fifteen other fully armed Apaches waiting just off the B&B site for orders to escort. Cindy recently had Lockheed Martin outfit her fleet of choppers with instantaneous threat detection and response. If a SAM was released as close as 500 feet away, the missile would immediately be downed with high intensity lasers. If lasers were fired to down the helicopters, it would be impossible because the choppers create a light and photon ultra-magnetic disrupter [shield](#). Apache helicopters will fly below the Blackhawks to further protect the guests of honor and their families heading to the ceremonies.

Larry and the guys had descended two cold fusion powered satellites into stationary low orbit over Washington, DC. Each satellite is as big as a bus with the best electronic surveillance and threat detection optics available. Every square inch of the metro area was being scanned continuously. The satellites have photon beam systems to destroy threats on the ground.

Jack drove up to Cindy in a small catering truck. "Good morning, General." Cindy said "You're a good man, Jack. You got some coffee handy?" Jack gave her a hot cup fixed just the way she liked it. His staff was unloading the food and having it distributed it out to the pilots and crew. "Don't worry, the Secret Service watched us prepare and they taste tested all the food." Cindy laughed "Nobody keeled over?" Jack said "I had to slap some fat agents' hands because they were sampling a little too much." Jack said "Based on the wakeup call requests, it looks like the guests will start coming out at 0730 hours. We have another catering truck out with the Apache crews." Cindy smiled "I knew I could count on you. Looks like we'll depart with our packages around 0845." Jack's employees set up chairs, tables and drink dispensers next to the choppers.

Then he went back to load up some breakfast items for the guests to enjoy before they boarded the Blackhawks.

By 7:45am the area next to the helicopters was bustling with activity. Cindy was outside welcoming the guests and said they had a little less than an hour to relax and enjoy their food. As the guests were sitting down and eating Cindy told them to be sure and buckle their seat belts. If they had to take evasive maneuvers, she didn't want anybody bouncing around inside a chopper.

Norma was sitting with Larry trying to relax over a cup of coffee while the kids were eating at another table. Lupe, sitting next to Connie said "This sausage is delicious. Have you tried some?" Connie said "Look. See, I rolled up some sausages in my crepes. See their cute little heads sticking out. I call it snoozing oinkers in a blanket. They taste really good with lime juice, sweet cream, and grape jelly." Lupe said "Mummm." and rolled up some too. Connie asked Lupe "How come you're not going over your speech?" "I got it memorized. Right now I just want to clear my head and have some fun. You ever rode in a Blackhawk before?" "Yes, yesterday morning." "That's right... How was it?" "Extremely cool. You're going to love it." Lupe said "Well actually they taught me and my dad how to fly one six months ago. I wasn't supposed to tell anyone. But you're my buds so who cares. I'm also rated to fly a Chinook. So yesterday I flew here as copilot. Flying a Chinook is ok, but it's not anything like a fully armed Blackhawk attack helicopter." Austin told Lupe he was a little nervous about riding in a convoy because it would attract attention from the ground. Lupe smiled "Don't worry, Cowboy. We'll be ok."

At 8:40am the general was encouraging everybody to enter the helicopters. In ten minutes everybody was in and buckled. She and her co-pilot, Bob, had walked around the choppers doing a visual integrity check. Then they entered their Apache and she gave orders for the other Apaches to lift off. Several were already in the air checking the proximity for problems. Then, one at a time, the Blackhawks lifted up and proceeded forward. By 8:55 she had her cruising [music](#) going as the birds were all in formation heading to the museum. The satellites had a direct link to the general's Apache. Half way there Cindy was alerted by the lead satellite that a potential threat was 5 miles ahead. She immediately diverted the group to the left and ordered several Apaches to fly low in that area and check it out. As the group proceeded to the museum they heard some explosions and gunfire off in the distance. Problem neutralized.

The Blackhawks landed next to the amusement park building while the Apaches were hovering overhead. The guests of honor with their families began to disembark. "Mira, papi. There's your picture, and Bubba's too. Look at Auntie Norma ripping that guy's eye out. I hate memories like this." Tony said "But we have to remember, mija, so it won't happen again." Lupe also saw many other large posters hanging on the walls outside the building. They were in groups... New York City, Chicago, Los Angeles, The People's Monument and Museum.

The visitors were all bused in. The area inside the amusement park was completely filled with people. The parking lot was also full. There were folding chairs, umbrellas, water misters, zillions of porta poties, and tent tops, and food & beverage tents for everybody's convenience. As the guests of honor were entering the building, the entire crowd broke out into applause.

They started chanting "Free-dom, free-dom, free-dom....." Hundreds of giant screen TVs and speakers were placed in large open tents all over the Museum parking lot.

Platforms on both sides of the stage were set up to seat the honorees and other dignitaries. The 600' by 300' open floor in front of the stage had seating for 14 thousand people. And thousands more were allowed to sit wherever they could in viewing proximity of the stage.

The ceremony began at 9:30am. An Alaskan Yup'ic shaman, a Dakota Sioux medicine man, a Unity Christian church leader, a Catholic priest, an Eastern Orthodox priest, a Chinese Shen practitioner, a Buddhist monk, a Shinto priest, a Rabbi, a Hindu priest, a Sikh priest, and [Ayaan Hirsi Ali](#) were standing shoulder to shoulder holding hands. One at a time each said a brief prayer for all of those who died one year ago. As they were praying, large screens inside and out were showing the carnage that night and the next morning a year ago. Over two hundred thousand Americans perished at the hands of these terrorists. After the gas and nuclear bomb detonations in New York, Chicago, and LA, groups of terrorists combed through these and other cities killing people with small arms fire and hand thrown IED's.

The People also wanted to show satellite videos of the nuclear detonations across the Islamic world that could have easily been avoided if only male Muslims had been more tolerant, open minded and less war like and not demanding the rest of the world submit to their ignorant myopic barbaric oppressive misogynistic way of life. This bizarre primitive savagery could no longer be tolerated in today's advanced civilization that lives more by the golden rule than by a blood thirsty iron fist.

After the prayers Elon Musk came forward to center stage and spoke. He wanted to recognize some of those who selflessly gave of themselves to stop the enemy from doing any more damage after the initial attacks. As Elon was speaking, short videos were being displayed showing regular armed citizens taking out the enemy. Elon then turned the podium over to heroes who one by one came up and told their story as the videos played showing their courage and valor. One small group of heroes prevented the bombing of the Brooklyn Bridge. Another killed terrorists as they were about to destroy the Lincoln tunnel. Heroes in many cities kept buildings and utility plants from being destroyed as they cleared the streets of these Muslim devils. The stories lasted for an hour and a half. There was sullen joy and pride on the faces everywhere in the United States as they watched and listened to their stories. At the end, the applause lasted for over 20 minutes. The screens projected crowds from city to city across our country showing the applause and cheering for these regular everyday people who stepped up and became heroes. The People had a special affinity for Larry Page, Serge Brin, and Mark Zuckerberg. Larry with his soft voice and brilliant achievements in our communication infrastructure. Serge with his dedication to alternative energy resources and DNA research. Mark for his language translator that helped bring the world together as one family. Elon introduced the last segment of videos to underscore the importance of everyday regular people and the amazing acts of valor they perform when called upon. So the video was what occurred that night on the dance floor. The interior had audio pickups as well as video. The crowd went crazy as they saw Norma, like a lioness protecting her mate, striking with the rage of a Tasmanian devil, screaming taking down the two terrorists. The crowd got louder as Norma was yelling "die! you motherf--ker, die!, die! ..." while she was kicking one the terrorists in the face as he lay knocked out on the floor.

Everybody boomed as they showed screaming out of control Norma with her arms and legs flailing being pulled away from the men she was trying to kill as the crimson blood was streaming from their faces and splattering onto the polished floor. They also showed Bubba saving Mark as he thrust the terrorist's head into the floor snapping his neck and crushing his skull. And they showed Tony saving Serge as he killed the terrorist with one blow to the temple. The crowd went crazy cheering as Norma, Bubba, and Tony rose from their seats and slowly walked up to the front of the stage waving to the People, then walked back and sat down.

Elon came to the podium again. "The greatest weapon the enemy has is surprise. You, the People, have mandated that the chance of surprise be brought down even lower than it was before. And as we have seen when we are attacked by surprise its regular armed citizens at that location that can play the biggest role. I'm going to read a statement put together and approved by a super-majority vote of the citizens of the United States. It's a letter to the families of the fallen and to the heroes. We all already know what it says, but the People felt it was important to recite it out loud on this solemn occasion."

"Almost four years ago we brought about the Big Change for the Freedom of all our People. With help from God, our Pioneers, and millions of volunteers we were able to make it work. Our resolution to be a free people was tested a year ago. We demonstrated to ourselves strong will and determination. We did not and will never submit to any group for any reason. Acting alone we are nothing, but acting as one we are very powerful. God Bless us all and may we continue to be happy and continue to be the beacon of Freedom to all other nations on earth. To the Heroes who selflessly gave of themselves a year ago... Thank you very much. And to the families of those who died... May God bless and keep forever your loved ones in His caring hands in Heaven. This date will forever be a day of remembrance. We must never forget. *We must never allow it to happen again.* Amen."

Everybody across America said "Amen."

Elon paused for a moment of silence, then sat down.

A last minute request to appear was made by a known and recognized mystical child. It was immediately approved, and now this little seven year old wearing a plain long white cotton dress walked to front center stage. She said "This is for the 214,786 souls who tragically died one year ago." She then began singing a [prayer](#). As she sang, a beautiful golden light slowly started to emanate from her words which eventually completely encircled her. This aura of blessed light rose straight up and out of the building. The light also spread sideways to where the 1,500 souls passed a year ago. Then she sang "[Note to God](#)". Upon finishing singing her prayers she looked up and raised her arms high with her hands open to the heavens and said "Thank You." Then she bowed to the crowd and started walking back to her seat. Other than the sound of tears, everybody sat completely silent.

Elon returned to the podium and said "Thank you..... This ends our memorial and benediction for those who died a year ago." "It's a little before one o'clock. Let's take a break for lunch. We have hundreds of food tents with seating out in the parking lot. We also have food and drink kiosks everywhere inside the buildings with plenty of seating for everyone. And, it's all free. In

fact as you the People decided, the food today everywhere in our United States is free. See you back here at 3:00 eastern standard time. Then we will proudly recognize some new Young Pioneers of America. Thanks."

The Young Pioneers

After lunch and after everybody was comfortably seated and ready, a young girl wearing a black baggy blouse and jeans, a mask over her eyes and a microphone clipped to her blouse with a device to alter her voice walked up to the podium. She took a deep breath and slowly exhaled. She looked at the audience and asked "How are you doing?" The crowd mostly answered "Great." She smiled and said, "Me, too." "Elon and the rest of the Pioneers, they're calling me one of the new Young Pioneers." "Being up here is like a strange dream." "It's very surreal....."

"So you're probably wondering who I am?....." She paused for a moment and slowly said, "I'm a fourteen year old who likes to have fun and enjoy life." Then she stepped away from the podium and said, "And, I'm a girl who figured out a way to instantly move people across great distances using temporal energy threads." After Lupe said that the crowd became very silent. She paused for a moment and looked at everybody sitting in front of her. She giggled and giggled and said "Yes, you heard me right..... I can move things across great distances almost instantly." She continued "They say it is the greatest achievement in the history of humankind. You notice I didn't say mankind, because it was me, a young girl who did it! I don't know why all this patriarchal crap is so engrained into our world. Anyway, they say it's the greatest achievement ever made. Listen, I don't know about that. I'm just a kid who likes to question things and find answers."

"But, I do know this as a **fact**. Years ago, corporate "for-profit" greed with absolutely no social conscience caused my dad to lose his job. So about five years ago my family became homeless. We were destitute. My mother was weak and couldn't take it so she left me and my dad. Six months later they took me away from my father because he wasn't making enough money to support me. There were no jobs out there, especially for the homeless." Lupe paused for a moment. "Because of some assholes who shipped my dad's job overseas MY FAMILY WAS BLOWN APART!" "DAMN THOSE PEOPLE!" Then Lupe stopped and looked around at the audience. "Six months later the police came to my foster parents' home and told them my father died from starvation and the elements. Thankfully they were wrong. Although, I am sorry for the man who died, whoever he was. A month went by and you made the Big Change happen. Then, two weeks later my dad found me." Lupe paused for about ten seconds, "It was the happiest day of my life."

Lupe paused again and stepped further away from the podium and walked to the edge of the stage looking closely at everybody seated. Then she looked at the TV cameraman and asked him to bring her in close. Lupe continued "This moment is a blessing because I thought I would never have the opportunity to directly speak to you.

I just want to thank you from the bottom of my heart for giving me my life and my father back. Because without you I wouldn't be here today. Thank you very much!"..... Lupe paused for a moment to collect herself while she was wiping away the tears streaming down her face..... Then she continued "This invention I came up with is the least I can do to repay you. It's the

least I can do. She paused and wiped some more tears off her cheeks. To the People!" Then Lupe started to clap. The crowd started to cheer. She then started chanting Free-dom, Free-dom, Free-dom and the crowd joined in. This went on for a few minutes and then she waved for calmness.

Then Lupe said "Me, a destitute homeless worthless little Mexican kid, because of the Big Change, because of you, I was given the freedom and access to fly to the wildest reaches of my imagination and abilities. If it wasn't for you, I wouldn't have been able to invent what I call "Blinking". I can move you to the Andromeda galaxy and back in several minutes." She paused and looked around again as everybody was sitting silent, many with their mouths gaping open, and some gasping in disbelief..... She giggled again and smiled "Incredible, isn't it..... There are still a few kinks we're working out. But the future of the plants and animals on earth including the human race looks much more promising now that we can move to other hospitable planets.

As you can see, the People's military and secret service has decided to keep my identity a secret because this thing is way too big. And, I'm sure all of you don't have a problem with keeping me safe and sound." She smiled and asked "Right?" Then the crowd responded "Right!" She continued "In order for me to work on this project I made them all agree that I would from time to time be able to speak directly to you the People to let you know the progress we've made. After all, "Blinking" belongs to you. As much as possible I want you to be informed about this exciting new discovery. The exact way it works has to remain a secret because if it gets into the wrong hands we could have some very serious problems." "Don't you agree?" Thousands in the audience said "Yes."

"Now I'd like to move on to a special request I have, and it's something I hold very near and dear to me. A year ago my talents were discovered by a very powerful man. He made sure I had all the tools at my disposal to make it happen. It's a year later and I clearly understand that we need a better mechanism to identify kids' talents. Then the kids need to be given the encouragement and the tools to help them with their passions. That's every kid in every school everywhere across our country....." Lupe paused..... "Think about the greatness and happiness of today's society and multiply it a thousand times. This is what I'm asking of you. With the help of Elon Musk and Mark Zukerberg, I developed and posted the plan on the internet. It's titled "Opportunity for all kids." I put the author as "that blinking kid"." Then she giggled a little at the name she assigned herself. "All I ask is you please review it. I believe the resources we dedicate to this effort will really pay off for us all. Thank you very much and I'd like to return the podium to Mr. Musk."

Elon came to the podium. It was about five minutes before Elon could bring the crowd to quiet again. Elon continued "The original Pioneers, those adults you see on the walls in this museum, came together about six months ago and decided to recognize some of our youth who have done extremely well with their accomplishments. And even though we still need to improve through the "Opportunity for all kids" program, because of the Big Change there have been some extraordinary unbelievable wonderful inventions, discoveries, and ways to improve our life. So we decided to recognize those who we feel are the top five young people. We chose to spotlight young kids because that's when we are most divergently creative. This afternoon they are

receiving the highest national merit award for achievement and are officially becoming a Pioneer. We're calling them the new Young Pioneers because we wanted to remind ourselves that it's the youth of America who are our future. I'm sure many of you have read about [Maslow's](#) hierarchy of needs. People take action based on needs. We decided to recognize our space traveler first because of the nature of her discovery, but also because her primary basic need was to observe, to question, to understand, to discover, and to see beyond. Her main motivation was her thirst for knowledge. That in itself is extraordinary."

Next up is a young another fourteen year old who was able to discover..... Well, I'll let her tell you all about it. Would you please put your hands together and welcome our next new Young Pioneer..... The applause was thunderous as the girl walked across the stage and to the podium.

"Thank you, thank you." As you can see for my safety, they wanted to keep my identity a secret too. As she started to speak about her discovery the crowd became very quiet. "Elon has known me for some time now. And he would probably be the first to tell you how much I love to talk. Right Mr. Musk?" As she looks over at him and he's shaking his head up and down. The crowd laughed. "So let me know if my story gets too long. Is that a deal? Ok."

"When I was in first grade, a boy in my class was constantly harassing me. He tripped me, pushed me, hit me, and threatened me. It was a constant barrage. One day I finally had enough and had two boys hold him down on the ground while I sat on his stomach and beat him in the face with my backpack. He was such a jerk the other kids gathered around and cheered me on. He was twice my size and much stronger than me. I hated the fear he put into my spirit. And pounding him gave me a thrill I couldn't describe. In second, third, and fourth grades from time to time he would continue to intimidate me. Then in fifth grade he pulled my jeans down to my ankles and pushed me to the floor laughing. That finally got him expelled permanently. But he threatened me as he left. I'm going to get you. I'm going to take you out. And, he was deadly serious..... I was 10 then.

And then the Big Change happened, which gave our family extra money, some of which I used for experimentation. So for the next three years I concentrated on nothing but making myself strong. Exercising wasn't enough. I had to be destroyer strong so I researched the biology of muscles in all organisms at the cellular level. Since the Big Change, all information is open and available. And with permission, which is easy to get, laboratories are open for inquisitive people to use. So, all my time out of school was spent doing this research. It became an obsession which took over my life. I experimented with my pet hamsters. At first a few died. But gradually I saw improvement. Then there was that fateful morning when I woke up and saw the bars on the hamster cage bent outward and the two little guys were missing. I looked everywhere in the bedroom. They weren't there. The search widened to the rest of the house. As I was searching the living room I saw our family cat was up on a shelf next to the television shaking looking down trying to see something. Then as I was walking up to the cat to put him on the floor the cat jumped off and ran into the hallway. In hot pursuit were the hamsters. One jumped on the cat's back and started wailing on him. The kitchen door was open but the screen door was closed. The screaming cat ran right through the screen with the hamster firmly locked on and the other hamster running right behind. That was the last I ever saw of Felix and my two hamsters, Curly and Moe. With a fulfilling sinister sense of satisfaction I realized I finally did it.

Then I was able to duplicate the results on four other hamsters. This time I used a very strong cage. After a few months, without anybody knowing, I tried it on myself. But in a very small dose.

I can't adequately explain the feeling that coursed through my body. I picked up a basketball and exploded it with my hands. I went outside in the back yard and jumped as high as the top of trees. The next day at school I went to the baseball field where the boys were practicing and walked up to the pitcher and asked if I could throw one. They all laughed and said go ahead, but I might want to pitch underhand so I wouldn't hurt myself. I yelled to the catcher to get ready. Then I reared back and threw one so fast that when it hit the catcher's mitt, it knocked him on flat his back. He was yelling in pain shaking his glove hand. I didn't throw it as hard as I could have because I would have killed him. I turned and smiled at the pitcher and said thanks. He took off his baseball cap and scratched the top of his head as he was staring at me happily walking off the field. Then I turned around and winked at him as I met up with my peeps on the other side of first base. My parents didn't have a clue about what I was doing until I told them a few days later. Like typical parents who always worry too much, they immediately took me to our family doctor. After I told the doc about boosting my cellular organelles and infusing more oxygen in my body cells she immediately checked me into a hospital for testing. The next morning I was given a battery of tests and that evening, the Peoples secret service talent expert named Ms. Whitley came to visit me in the hospital. She brought a baseball and a speed reading laser gun. She asked me to throw the ball down the hallway. She said throw it as hard as you possibly can. The laser was calibrated to a maximum of 500 miles per hour. It went full tilt and more. They had to get a crowbar to remove the ball from the stone wall at the other end of the hallway. Ms. Whitley and her team quickly gathered me and my family up and moved us to a safe place where I could continue my work. The People's secret service changed my name and scrubbed my original identity and every photo and video of me off the internet and all devices that are linked to the net. I didn't realize we could do that. That's pretty nice if you need to become invisible."

Then she turned around and somebody from the back of the stage threw her a football, a basketball, and a baseball. "You, the People have mandated that everything be "open source". So here is what I can do...." She first picked up the football and easily squishes it with one hand. She slapped the basketball to make it pop. "Now here is the fun one. With one hand I can reduce this hard baseball into a loose mass of threads." And she did just that. "Amazing, isn't it. But to do this last trick, I had to figure out a way to make our bones and skin tougher. And, we still have some possible serious side effects that need to be worked out. But once it's deemed safe, the next question is, do we the People want us all to have this extraordinary ability. I have very mixed feelings about it. Give it to a bad person like my childhood nemesis and you'll have a really bad person. So maybe we should keep it out of the hands of people who have already demonstrated inappropriate behaviors. For example we only allow 19 year olds with a clean past to be trained as police. But it's up to you, the People, to decide. We will be explaining the benefits and detriments on the internet very soon for you base your decision."

Then a person close to the front yelled out "How fast can you run?" She smiled and said "A person just asked how fast can I run." "The answer is much faster than a cheetah. And over a longer period of time because I drench my muscle cells with oxygen and chemical energy. The

oxygen primarily comes from red blood cells composed of hemoglobin molecules with twenty four amino acid chains instead of two. A red blood cell usually has 270 million hemoglobin molecules. My blood cells have twice that many and are shaped differently to hold much more oxygen. And as a byproduct of my work we stumbled on exactly what causes cell recognition and cell regeneration. And if that wasn't enough, we are on the edge of being able to reconnect severed spinal cords..... Yes, I now know how to have brain cells and other nerve cells regenerate..... I don't know what else to say except I hope these discoveries makes us a better and happier people. I'll keep you up to date and thank you very much. And now I'll return the podium to Mr. Musk." (The girl's new secret name is Tracy Smith.) As Tracy walked back to her seat she was showered with applause.

Elon came up to the Podium "Most of the current Pioneers, you know, us old people, we're technology nerds. So we love to find others who have made wild and crazy breakthroughs in science. You can see that with the two Young Pioneers we've spotlighted so far. But as you know technology must never supersede our humanity. You the People have mandated that everything we do must benefit our environment, our plants and animals and us human beings. Simply put, our focus must always be on having a better life and greater happiness. So with that in mind we wanted recognize our third new Young Pioneer and have him explain the reason why we have included him in the top five. Let's all give him a hand."

The applause subsided when the young man came up to the podium. "Hello..... As you can see I don't have a mask on and my voice isn't disguised. That's because almost everything I've done so far is up on the internet and available for others to use to better our world. My name is Jacob Jackson. I'm 16. I remember when I was eight I woke up late at night because a large [beetle](#) was biting my nose. As I pulled him off, he didn't want to let go. I guess I tasted pretty good. It was one of those great big bugs with huge mandibles that open and close sideways. It deposited a virus under my skin and I had a sore on my nose for months. This was just the tip of the filth I had to live in before the Big Change."

"My family is just my mother and I. Like with Barak Obama's dad, monogamy and responsibility was a concept completely foreign to my father. So he didn't stick around for very long. My mother didn't have an adequate education. She took a menial job as a maid for a wealthy Cuban family in Manhattan, while we were financially forced to live in the projects in a very bad part of Harlem. Before the Big Change, males living in Harlem had less than a 50% chance of living to the age of 65. It's interesting to note that now after the Big Change, it's estimated that we have a 90% chance of surviving to age 65. And I thank you for that. Anyway, this Cuban family in Manhattan made sure my mom got all the government handouts so they could pay her slave wages. Back in the 1860s all the Emancipation Proclamation did was to take our chains off. It didn't allow us to have the opportunity for a good life. With the wages my mom was being paid, she was still a slave, but now a "free slave". And look at where we lived. Our living conditions in that Harlem apartment were horrible. The Hasidic slumlord didn't spend a penny on maintenance in our building. And he could get away with it because most of the attorneys and judges in New York were the same ethnicity. So, it gives me great pleasure to know he's now working on a prison farm out in the very hot Mojave Desert along with his attorney and judge buddies. But getting back to our living conditions. No matter how hard momma tried, she couldn't keep the rats and insects out. So my focus became filth and how to

clean it up. The need to have a clean home started to possess me. All my free time was spent trying to come up with answers. The biggest problem was the rats. I realized the only way to stop them was at the cellular level. For years I tried and tried but didn't have enough money and resources to carry out real research. Then when I was 12 the Big Change happened. Mom moved us to a decent apartment that we actually owned. Finally no rats or bugs. But I knew in many homes there were still rats and bugs. So now with money from the Big Change I continued my research. I initially thought about introducing bacteria or viruses into their food, but it could have hurt people or pets so that was out. Then, it came to me. That little light went off in my head. Mammals use hormones secreted from their endocrine system to help regulate their bodies. I was able to isolate some special hormones that affected the thyroid gland and the "fight or flight" response in their central nervous system. I introduced large amounts of these into their food supply and in a few days they were all dead. I also made sure these hormones broke down into harmless salts after a few days. In my old apartment building before the Big Change, neighbors down the hall were using arsenic to kill rats. If you put arsenic into our bodies it stays and collects in our bones. Even trace amounts." In a sarcastic way Jacob continued "But before the Big Change that didn't matter. See, we were just a bunch of worthless Blacks who only took from society without giving anything back....." He paused and looked around and then said "What a crock of shit." Anyway I was 12 when I discovered how to safely get rid of rats. Next came the roaches and beetles. It took me a year of experimenting, but I finally did it. The solution was so exquisitely simple. Find a way to completely disrupt the telomeres in the insects' eggs as they were developing. The simple act of mitosis was halted. No more roaches."

"I continued doing work with telomerase. I had a friend who lived down the hall who worked at a college lab. He had access to microscopes, autoclaves and other good stuff. He was amazed at how much I knew and liked some of my crazy ideas. So I got him to assist me. After immersing myself in research and experimentation he and I started to understand this stuff. Using cellular material from zygotes, I was able to replicate telomerase and insert it into human cells using a harmless viral delivery system. This is the kind of stuff that will allow us to live at least several hundred years. Since the Big Change was in full force, I and my friend made an appeal to be granted access to more equipment and information to improve upon my discoveries. You, the People, allowed it and our inroads have been phenomenal. But wait, it doesn't stop here. Remember when I was seven I wanted to make everything clean. I wanted my environment to be clean." He paused and said "How about that..... A clean environment....." "The first huge problem I tackled was mercury in our food chain. If I have a steady diet of large fish, over a period of time my brain would collect too much [mercury](#) and I would start to have serious neurological problems. Again, it took about a year of crazy experimenting and off the wall research, but I finally did it. Instead of attempting to introduce the solution to all the rivers, lakes, and oceans which was totally impractical to get immediate results, I introduced the chemicals into the organisms after they were caught and kept alive. In a few days all the mercury in their bodies were turned into harmless chemicals. Then they're killed and ready to eat. But I realized this isn't a real cure, so we are slowly introducing the chemicals that act as a catalyst to break down mercury in our oceans. And of course the best approach is using the chemicals to break down mercury in our own bodies. We are still doing testing on volunteers to make sure it's safe."

"So why stop with mercury. Right? Why not move to childhood illnesses." Jacob walked to a corner of the stage asking the audience to raise their hands if they've ever heard of "cystic fibrosis". Not many hands were raised. "That's sad because it makes a kid's life pure hell with lots of hospital stays. A large amount of these kids die before they reach adulthood." Then Jacob walked around some more and said "Before the Big Change there was no cure. We knew the exact cause. I'm going to get a little technical here. But if a regular person studied this stuff for about a week you would have a good idea about the following."

The next three paragraphs came from Wikipedia. It's not necessary to read this but as you can see we know exactly what causes it. "CF is caused by a mutation in the gene "cystic fibrosis transmembrane conductance regulator" (CFTR). The most common mutation, $\Delta F508$, is a deletion of three nucleotides that results in a loss of the amino acid phenylalanine at the 508th position on the protein. This mutation accounts for two-thirds (66-70%) of CF cases worldwide and 90% of cases in the United States; however, there are over 1500 other mutations that can produce CF. Although most people have two working copies (alleles) of the CFTR gene, only one is needed to prevent cystic fibrosis. CF develops when neither allele can produce a functional CFTR protein. Thus, CF is considered an autosomal recessive disease."

"The CFTR gene, found at the q31.2 locus of chromosome 7, is 230,000 base pairs long, and creates a protein that is 1,480 amino acids long. More specifically the location is between base pair 117,120,016 to 117,308,718 on the long arm of chromosome 7, region 3, band 1, sub-band 2, represented as 7q31.2. Structurally, CFTR is a type of gene known as an ABC gene. The product of this gene (the CFTR) is a chloride ion channel important in creating sweat, digestive juices and mucus. This protein possesses two ATP-hydrolyzing domains, which allows the protein to use energy in the form of ATP. It also contains two domains comprising 6 alpha helices apiece, which allow the protein to cross the cell membrane. A regulatory binding site on the protein allows activation by phosphorylation, mainly by cAMP-dependent protein kinase. The carboxyl terminal of the protein is anchored to the cytoskeleton by a PDZ domain interaction."

"In addition, there is increasing evidence that genetic modifiers besides CFTR modulate the frequency and severity of the disease. One example is mannan-binding lectin, which is involved in innate immunity by facilitating phagocytosis of microorganisms. Polymorphisms in one or both mannan-binding lectin alleles that result in lower circulating levels of the protein are associated with a threefold higher risk of end-stage lung disease, as well as an increased burden of chronic bacterial infections."

Jacob paused and said "So we knew down to the "gnat's ass" exactly what it was, yet nobody was working to come up with a cure. Why you ask? Because there was no money in it. Comparatively speaking, not that many people have CF. There was more money to be made elsewhere. Every male over 50 thinks he needs Viagra so billions of dollars were made. For years and years pharmaceutical companies made loads of profits on drugs like Zoloft, Lipitor, beta blockers, Ritalin, and other drugs that could be given to a larger share of the populous, whether or not we really needed them. Before the Big Change, these companies were completely profit driven with absolutely no social conscience! And after doing a little checking, I'm very happy to report that many of the people running these companies are now doing physical labor in the Mojave Desert. Aaaaah, justice! Slumlords and pharmaceutical moguls. Isn't it great. Oh, and all their family wealth was taken away."

"When I was fifteen I started experimenting to find the cure for CF. If we know how to extract bad genes and replace them with good genes in every cell in the body then the magic begins. It's called Gene Replacement Therapy. We've been trying to do it since the 70's." Jacob laughed and said "They've been working on it like Edison did with his experiments. The great Nicola Tesla once said of Edison: "If he (Edison) had a needle to find in a haystack he would not stop to

reason where it was most likely to be, but would proceed at once, with the feverish diligence of a bee, to examine straw after straw until he found the object of his search. I was almost a sorry witness of such doings, knowing that a little theory and calculation would have saved him ninety per cent of his labor." You see Edison once said "Genius is one percent inspiration, ninety-nine percent perspiration." Boy did he have it wrong! And like Edison, the people previously working on gene replacement therapy were like dunces bumping into one another."

Then Jacob went back to the podium and said "In six months my team found the answer. The biggest problem was the body's immune system going nuts with the introduction of foreign viruses. So the obvious answer was to not have them be foreign. Duh. There are lots of viruses living in a symbiotic relationship within the human body. Take some out. Introduce what we need into their shells. Multiply them to hundreds of trillions. Check to see there are no mutations. Then inject them into the body. Give a CP patient a treatment like this once a year. Wam, bam, boom, baby. There's your cure."

"And, using our gene replacement therapy technique we are making very positive inroads to curing amyotrophic lateral sclerosis disease. Everybody knows of it as ALS disease."

"Before the Big Change did you get the feeling that researchers liked to prolong their work just to keep their jobs? I did. For example, there was a gigantic industry that had grown around cancer. It was so big it seemed like a cancer itself."

"The reality is most people don't even know what cancer is. Here it is in four words. It's undifferentiated cells multiplying uncontrollably." The industry made it seem so complicated by tagging it with regional names like breast cancer or brain cancer. And then they broke it down to discrete biological differences. Listen, a cancer cell is a cancer cell. It's undifferentiated and multiplying without an off switch. An embryonic stem cell is an undifferentiated cell that can be differentiated in future generations. But cancer cells are just globs of cells that have no purpose. Researchers have shown that some cancer cells can have characteristics of stem cells, and that is why some cancers were hard to eliminate. But even with these little nuances, a cancer cell is simply a cancer cell."

He looked around and asked "So what if we knew how body cells communicate with each other. What if we knew how cells are able to recognize what they are and what the cells surrounding them are and who they need to be and what function they need to provide? What if we knew how to tell cells to stop dividing? What if we could just flip the switch off to stop mitosis?" Jacob smiled and said "A lot of what ifs, huh?" The audience laughed.

"It's interesting because the 14 year old that was up here just before me has already found the secret to cell recognition. She can cause cells to band together and regenerate a hand or a leg. She didn't really go into that, but she can. These cell recognition and regeneration breakthroughs would not have been possible without the work of the girl who is going to speak to you after I sit down. So in a collaborative fashion we all used each other's work to make great inroads to stopping cancer. Just how do we stop cancer? First we tell an undifferentiated cell that they need to shut down and stop multiplying. So who does that? Well the differentiated cells around the cancerous mass do it. These differentiated cells also send out a distress call to macrophages

to come and eat these undifferentiated cells that the industry calls cancer. So it's a three-step process. First, you turn the mitosis switch off. Second, you have macrophages recognize and eat the undifferentiated cell mass. Third, you have the cells repair any damaged area, even if it is to regrow an appendage."

"And you know earlier I mentioned my work with telomerase? Understanding the seemingly unlimited cell divisions of cancer cells helped greatly in understanding how telomerase functions."

"I don't want to ruin it for the girl who's up next, so I'm going to stop here. Let's suffice it to say for all practical purposes we three have come up with the cure for cancer. That's two 14 year olds and one 16 year old. The difference is we opened up our minds and carried out our work like Nicola Tesla instead of Thomas Edison. Thank you. And we'll keep you posted on the status of our cancer cure." Then Jacob turned the podium back over to Elon Musk. The audience applauded for a long while before Elon could bring them under control.

"The next person up has accomplished something I still can't wrap my head around. It's nothing short of unbelievable. But let's have her explain it. Please give her a warm welcome." A young girl walks up and shakes Elon's hand before he leaves the podium. "Hey, everybody. How you doin'?" The crowd mostly yelled out "Great". She continued "Before I get started how about we all stand up for a minute and stretch. Come on, get the cobwebs out and get that blood circulating." The thousands of people in front of the stage start to stand up and move around and the noise level rises. She continued "As you can see they also wanted to keep my identity a secret. Bummer!" (*Her new name is Molly Fabela.*) As everybody is stretching a little, Molly walked to the front of the stage and looked down at the audience. She points to a young woman and said "You were just wondering what my breakthrough is and why I'm having everybody stand up and stretch. Is that correct?" Mary covered her mouth and said "How did you know that?" "Well I said the most obvious thing and hoped I would be right.So to answer your question, my breakthrough is what you would call "reading a person's mind". But it's not really that. It's much more subtle and complicated. I'm getting a reading that most of you would like to sit down again, so let's do it." Molly is standing in front on the stage and a security guard hands her up a folding chair. Molly opens it and sits down, too. "I don't like podiums. I like to be up close where I can really see you." She continued "Let's start by removing some facts out of our "holy" lexicon of accepted truths. First, we don't think just with our brain. Our whole body thinks. Each cell thinks. And, they communicate with each other all the time. We just don't realize it. Our brain doesn't tell the rest of our body what to do. Our whole body works in a collaborative effort to survive. The best example to explain this is when a human egg gets fertilized. First of all, the egg's DNA is only one half a normal cell. Same with the spermatozoa. Exactly how in detail do they exist with only half a genetic code? I'm still working on answering that question. And how does the egg instantly know when to seal up its walls once one sperm enters? We know the answer, but I also believe intelligence is involved. Just like with the formation of the zygote, then the blastula stage, then the gastrula stage. Just how do these cells decide what to become? How do they dole out the work and decide what their identity will be? The answer is they to talk to each other. Every cell in your body is intelligent."

"So if the brain controls everything then how does a body stay alive when the spinal cord is cut just below the brain? How does the heart keep on beating? How does peristaltic action continue in the intestines? Granted the body's muscles are controlled by the brain. But only the voluntary muscles do. And that is for a reason. Because like a symphony orchestra the muscles need to work together and have the instant capacity to change patterns. So the brain is assigned that task."

"Bringing in the environment in a sophisticated way through our senses and having a central interpretive center to better understand what's going on was important too. And having a place to store all that our senses have taken in was important."

"But like I mentioned, there is one very important concept we missed. We don't only think with our brain, we think everywhere in our body."

The next bogus truth is we are separate entities unto our own. We believe that but we're wrong." She signals with her hand held high and a [buzzer](#) sounds. "That's my 'you believed wrong' buzzer. My team used to make this sound about once a day for a while when we were making some significant discoveries about biological communication. Our discoveries shot down many previously accepted truths."

Molly stood up and pulled her chair to the other corner of the stage and sat down. She checked out a good looking physically fit young couple. Molly pointed to them and said "Plants and trees don't have brains do they?" After getting over the slight shock that they were called on, the woman responds "No, they don't." Molly said "You're right, you can now go to the front of the class." The audience starts laughing. Molly continued "But does that mean they can't communicate within themselves and with other plants?" She looks at the lady for an answer and said "OK, I put you on the spot. You don't have to answer because most people don't know the answer which is of course they can communicate within themselves and with other plants." "There's a big cottonwood tree in the front yard where I used to live. Years ago a seed dropped and germinated close to the mother tree. As the seedling grew, the mother cottonwood did not grow branches or foliage over the seedling. She allowed the youngster to have some room to grow. Now if that isn't intelligence, I don't know what is." Molly picked up her chair and moved it to middle front stage and sat down. "See, we humans are all hung up on what we see and not what is really there. As I'm looking out in the audience...." She pauses... Molly points to a girl about on the 10th row and said "Hey, I like the outfit you're wearing. Could you stand up for a minute so everybody can see how nice you look today. Yes, you wearing the gradiented colors of violet to purple. Stand up for a second." The girl about Molly's age was a little embarrassed as she stood up. "Isn't that outfit beautiful. It complements her looks and puts a little edge on her style. I like it. We see violet colors because it is a visible light wave frequency that is bouncing off of her fabric. All the other waves are being absorbed by the fabric. So the fabric itself has no color. What we see is the frequencies of light that aren't absorbed bouncing back to our eyes. So we think the fabric is violet to purple in color, but that's all false. "Thank you for your help. You can sit down now."

So we think of ourselves as people. When you look at me, you don't see trillions of cells working and communicating together to keep what you see as me alive. I guess the reason they

picked me as one of the new Young Pioneers is my most significant discovery. I have found ways to understand what our body cells are saying to each other. And I can communicate directly with your body cells. That is really significant because like Jake just said I can now tell differentiated cells to make undifferentiated cell quit multiplying. And I can send large white blood cells to come and eat up these cell masses. And if there is any significant damage caused by the cancer, because of the girl who spoke before Jake, she can now have cells regenerate what was destroyed by the cancer." Molly looked at the audience and said "This is almost a miracle like achievement, but the best part is... guess what?" She waits for the audience to say "What?" Molly smiled and said "The method of treatment is very simple and very inexpensive. All medical care is free to us now, but medical care does come with a cost to us as a whole. So if you can figure out a way to treat somebody inexpensively then all the better." The audience applauded.

This is the part that really mystifies Elon and the rest of the "older" Pioneers. If I told a professor in physics that atoms and molecules have feelings he or she would probably think I was nuts. After all energy is just that. No feelings, no emotions, no intelligence. But I believe that is not true. We humans are an assembly of trillions of cells consciously and intelligently put together to live and survive for as long as possible. In fact all living things are part of one whole. And when I say living things I mean everything that has atoms. That's because atoms have energy, and energy translates to living things in this reality. OK, so I just laid some new concepts on you that I won't go into because I want to keep you awake. Bottom line is I discovered much about communication both inside and outside cells. I can tell you what they're saying. And I can persuasively communicate with them."

With my monitoring instruments, I can tell you if you're attracted to a person, or angry, or sad, or... well you get the idea. I can really tell if and where in your body you're sick. I discovered a very discrete electrical field throughout our bodies. I call them electrical but they are more than that. And this field extends out from our bodies. These fields combine or intermingle between us humans. This is true especially when we're young. This is what I mean: Kiss the back of your hand. Don't feel very much, do you? Now kiss a person you're very attracted to and wow what a feeling. It's the discrete power fields around your bodies and on each of your lips that causes an explosion. The same is true with tickling. I can't tickle myself but I go crazy when somebody else tickles me. And that animal attraction you feel by looking at somebody... yep it's the power. And I recently discovered this type of power has similar characteristics to the energy/temporal threads the first Pioneer today discovered. This has some potential exciting implications that we are still exploring.

So how does my work translate to helping you or making your life happier? Well for one thing, we can accelerate the cure of diseases like cancer and plaque buildup in our arteries. The third biggest killer of humans in an emergency or intensive care unit is septic shock. My discoveries will end this problem. And I can do other things like tell you how your pet dog is doing and what he is thinking. Not thoughts in language form, in a much more primordial form. Anyway, I've talked to you long enough. I hope I didn't put too many of you to sleep. Being recognized as one of the first new Young Pioneers reminds me of how important my work is. So you have my promise that I'll continue to do my best. And, now I'll turn the podium over to Mr. Musk. Thank you!"

Molly stopped and hugged Elon as she walked to her seat. Elon stepped up to the podium and again it took at least five minutes to calm the crowd down so he could speak. Elon smiled and said, "Last but not least, we have a fifteen year old girl who has devoted her time after the Big Change in figuring out just what makes us happy. I'll let her talk more about it. Let's give her a big hand. The crowd applauded as she walked up to the podium.

"Hi. How are you doing?" Everybody gave positive verbal responses. "My name is Summer Zia. I'm a 15 year old Hopi/Zia Indian. You've probably seen my older [cousin](#) in that [America is beautiful](#) Coke commercial in 2014. We are known as Pueblo Indians. Our ancestors were Anishinaabe. The name refers to "good humans", or good people, meaning those who are on the right road or path given to them by the Creator or Gichi-Manidoo (the Great Spirit). The literal translation of Anishinaabe is 'beings made out of nothing', or 'spontaneous beings', since we had been created by divine breath and were made up of flesh and blood and a soul or spirit – instead of rock, or fire, or water, or wind."

"My people have made North America their home for well over one hundred thousand years. And the elder Story Tellers say our people had a very happy society. So the advancement that brought me here as a new Young Pioneer is my work with happiness. As part of the Big Change we mandated that our society must place our happiness above everything else. That sounds nice, but just what is happiness?"

"Remember before the Big Change the 'powers that be' focused on things like the Dow Jones average, the NASDAQ composite averages, new home starts, increase in sales and net profits of corporations compared to the year before, and of course our gross national product or GNP. Wasn't it sad that everything hinged on the 'Dollar Almighty'. We made money our God. That was completely wrong. All along we should have put ourselves and our lives before anything else. In my religion and in most faiths across the earth we are supposed to treat others as we would want to be treated. I want to have a happy life. And so I want everybody to have a happy life. As part of the Big Change we mandated that we have Gross National Happiness and not GNP as our society's goal."

"The Big Change happened when I was 11. This happiness thing stuck in my mind. The first thing I realized was Happiness is not a one size fits all. You can't throw a standardized happiness medicine blanket over everybody and think 'Wow, we did it'. So the definition of happiness is different for everybody. But, isn't it also different for us at different ages? And, in different environments and situations? So this concept of happiness is really a very dynamic ever changing thing. I believe real happiness is more than experiencing pleasure. Ask any drug addict and they'll tell you they experience pleasurable highs, but at the same time they'll tell you they aren't happy because they're a slave to it. Pleasure, whatever it may be, is a wonderful thing. But it must never either psychologically or physically hurt us or hurt others. The great actor James Earl Jones used to equate real happiness to contentment. Pleasures may be fleeting but being content with those pleasures and everything else in his life was real happiness. And I agree. It's not an act of settling for a situation, it's an act of obtaining and embracing the kind of life that will make you happy."

"I believe we as one People can provide certain standardized things for us all and that will for the most part make us content. But we shouldn't stop there. We should go further. Not so far that the returns are diminished for amounts of resources and energy expended. We don't want that."

"So I created a personal dynamic algorithm to give us ideas and help us understand better what we may need for happiness as we move through time. I'm not a psychologist or a sociologist or a psychiatrist. I'm just a young indigenous American Indian whose mother is a Zia Medicine Woman. All my life she showed me the ways of our People going back thousands of years. Hopefully some of this Indian wisdom I inserted into the algorithm will help us as we pass through our lives. The map is chronological, environmental, intrapersonal, and spiritual. To me, that seemed to be the natural way to proceed."

"The best tool to accomplish this is a 'personal' algorithm. Algorithms are usually used for calculation, data processing, and automated reasoning. The one I created continues to grow with the person. I wanted it to be alive and learn and constantly make changes for the better."

"This algorithm has to be in touch with the human spirit at all ages and as much as possible in all circumstances. When I was ten, I had pneumonia. After four days I had to be hospitalized. Happiness for me was getting over that sickness. At fifteen, happiness was my first real kiss. Years ago through today it's riding a pony. I could go on forever about what makes me happy. What makes me and you happy is an individualized thing. Right? So why not have a customized algorithm for each one of us. We have the computing capacity, so why not. And that's what I did. For this algorithm to work, it has to constantly get feedback from the person it's helping. As it progresses through time, the algorithm grows exponentially. There are several main categories this program utilizes. First is the wants and desires of the person. The input is vocal and biological. Next is the person's perspectives from their environment. Next is the psychological profile of the person and using that profile to see what would make him or her happy. Next is the immediate group of people interfacing with the person. Next are new random introductions of things to the person and seeing how they like them. Enhancements to diet and physical exercise. Introduction to diverse types of education. Introduction of thrills and excitement. Adding many types of adventures. All these and much more is part of my algorithm. Larry Page and Serge Brin were very impressed with the architecture of the program so they brought me here today. Soon we will have this up and running for every person in America. Thank you. And now I'll turn the podium back to Mr. Musk."

Again it took a while for Elon to calm everybody down. "Summer didn't go into detail about her program because she was afraid of getting way too technical. But believe me, after it's up and running you will really see the difference. It's phenomenal! And in reviewing Summer's work she told me that the program is strictly an adjunct or a buddy to help the person along, not to become a mirror reflection of that person's mind. She made sure that wouldn't happen because a program has no soul or moral compass. That's what I wanted to hear before I approved Summer for this award." Now I'd like to ask all five recipients to come forward to receive their awards." All the Pioneers already recognized in the Museum came up and stood to the side of the recipients. Elon gave each one of the new Young Pioneers their medal then a hug. Then the recipients walked down the line of existing Pioneers who gave each one a hearty handshake, verbal encouragement, and thanks. After the awards, the Pioneers then went back to their seats.

Elon looked at everybody seated and said "Thank you very much for coming here today and thank all of you at home for tuning in. This now ends the ceremony. Please be careful and stay safe on your travels back home." After some minutes of applause the building started to slowly clear out.

Security quickly escorted the honored guests out of the building and into the choppers waiting on the other side from where the crowd was exiting. Lupe, Tracy, Molly, Connie and her sisters, Austin, and Travis all decided to ride together on the way back. "Wow that was a long day", said Lupe, "I need to go back and jump into the pool. I heard we're supposed to have an informal get together later at the pool." Connie commented "After this afternoon heat dissipates, all I want to do is lay out on the water." Molly remarked "My bod says it's tired and my tummy says it's hungry." Little Nellie boasted "You guys are getting old. I'm not a bit tired." Tracy muttered "Show off." Connie charged "I saw you and mom took a nap in an air conditioned Blackhawk during lunch." Nellie smiled and confirmed in a little spoiled brat kind of way "That was our required beauty rest." At that point the pilot and co-pilot got in. The pilot said "Ready to hit the skies kids? Hey, I flew you three girls to the B&B yesterday. Well, you guys ready?" Austin said "Let's hit it, man." After everybody had been accounted for, General Steele gave the command to lift off, and one by one the Blackhawks entered the sky to join the Apaches overhead. The pilot named Dave said "Today I'm putting on some easy flying [music](#) I think you'll like. Sunday afternoon music." Their chopper slowly left the ground to join the pack. In a few minutes they were in formation and traveling to the B&B. No problems for the General this time. They arrived in about 10 minutes. The doors opened and Nellie was the first one to spring out and run away.

[Back at the Bed & Breakfast](#)

Lupe, Molly, and Tracy went to Connie's suite where they played canasta for several hours. Sophia and Nellie were playing video games on their new Xbox 500. The four older girls spent much of the time talking about the people at the high school they were attending in Las Cruces. Tracy told Connie "Let me tell you exactly what happened our first day at school in the lunchroom. We had just sat our trays down to eat. At the other end of this long table was a big senior football player type harassing a girl. All I could think about was how my nemesis had harassed me in school. I started getting really pissed off. This guy had sat down next to her and put his arm around her and she told him to stop it. He didn't, in fact two guys behind him were laughing and egging him on. With his other hand you could tell he was feeling up her leg under the table. She tried to get up and leave but he wouldn't let her. I'm watching this at the other end of the table. And, I just exploded with anger. I walked over to him and tapped him on the shoulder and said excuse me. He said don't bother me right now I'm busy. So I slapped the back of his head. He turned and looked at me with this asinine stupid looking face and he yelled "What!" I lost control and punched him in the mouth and knocked his front teeth out and I think I broke his jaw. I looked at the other 2 guys and said anybody else. One grabbed my arm and I flat foot kicked him in the groin area and destroyed his testicles." Connie gasped and then giggled and said "Good they deserved it." Then Tracy continued "Our bodyguards are working there as teachers and hallway and lunchroom monitors. The lunchroom monitor ran over and had the three guys taken out of the building. We never saw or heard of them again. One was a star on the football team." Connie asked "Well, what happened to the girl?" Tracy said "I think I

made a friend for life. She was really grateful. I found out later that academically she was the top student in the 11th grade. Her best subjects are English and literature. She's a timid shy introverted wallflower type. Her name is Bannister Ridgely. After I knocked that jerk's teeth out I asked her if she was ok. Bannister grabbed her books and she stood up and started to leave. I said what about your food? Bannister looked kind of down at the floor facing me and said thank you, but I'm the last person you want to have as a friend. I said, here I'll walk out with you. Then I turned and looked at Lupe and Molly and asked them with my eyes to come too. So Bannister sat down at a concrete table far away from the lunch room building. Then she started sobbing like a baby. Lupe interrupted and said "At that point I said to Bannister what the hell is going on here and why didn't any of the people around you stop it? Bannister said none of those people were her friends." Molly interjected "Then I told Bannister that they don't have to be your friends to do what's right. And Bannister said you three just don't get it do you. She said she was the nerd that everybody makes fun of. She has lunch in period one and her friends have lunch in period two. So she was all alone." Lupe said "And then I told Bannister there are over a hundred kids in that lunchroom right now. You're not alone. And besides you have us now. Bannister looked at us and said Great, now I've got 3 freshmen as friends. I'll really get harassed about that." Tracy said "Then I told Bannister, look, as you saw we can stop any problems. And believe it or not we can actually give you some street cred. We'll make a deal with you, Bannister. You tell us all we need to know about what's going on in this school and we'll make sure no harm of any kind comes to you. We might even make you popular. Is that a deal?" Lupe looked at Connie and said "As she was wiping the tears off her face she said fine, and maybe I can teach you three how to speak better English. Your sentence structure really sucks." Molly said "I thought that was funny as hell. Three 14 year olds that made miracle breakthroughs in science and we could use some help with English. Damn. But she was right. Each one of us shines in their own special way. Or is it in 'our' own special way. Sh-t, I really suck at grammar." They all laughed and then Connie told Molly to deal the cards. They continued talking about their escapades at the high school and how they were fitting in with the rest of the kids. After a few hours of card playing Lupe looked at the time on her cell phone. "Hey, it's almost 7:30. Let's go change into our swimsuits and go lay out on the water." Connie said "That's what I've been waiting for all day."

As Norma and her crew were walking through the lobby to the pool, Lupe ran up and said "You won't believe it but some big singers will be at the get together." Connie said "Like who?" "I talked to some from the Disney's Circle of Stars on the way to my room. They said a bunch are going to be visiting with us tonight." Connie said "That's great, but I hope they brought their swimsuits cause I'm still getting in the water. The pool is heated and my bod wants to relax."

Lupe and Connie and the gang with their parents in tow were the first of the kids to get there. "Mom, where's Larry" asked Nellie. "He's coming," smiled Norma, "You like Larry, don't you." "You bet. Is he going to be my new father?" Connie scolded "Don't be so pushy Nellie. Adult stuff is very complicated." Nellie declared "It's pretty simple to me. When you're old and you like someone, you marry them." She looked at her mom and said "And you taught me if you want something, you ask the universe for it. Then you dream about having it and believe it will happen." Norma confided "You're right, Nellie, I did teach you that. But, I wish it was that easy, babe." Connie injected "That's right mom. You drilled into us the belief that in this reality we're living in, I have to think about what I want first. I have to positively think and believe I

will get it. And once I want something and believe I will get it, then I must ask myself and the universe to give it to me. In other words, take affirmative action to see that it happens and the universe will help me along. And you told me to be persistent. You said some people call it focus, initiative, or ambition with a little magic mixed in. Whatever I wanted to call it, what I desire has to start in my mind first before it can become an achievable reality. Norma smiled and added "And don't forget, you have to ask the universe for it and actually believe it's going to happen. But it's still sometimes difficult. Sometimes the universe will give you what you want, but in a different way. A way you never expected." Norma looked at Tony "Am I right, Tony?" He responded "That's exactly what my great grandfather taught me. But, some of us are made to suffer along the path to achieving our dreams. That's the part I really don't like." Norma said "But doesn't it make the achievement worth more?" He responded "If along the way I'm disemboweled, will the food I desired make it better?" Norma stoically replied "Good point."

Norma's core group were the only people who knew Lupe, Tracy, and Molly are Young Pioneers. And they weren't about to say anything. So security allowed celebrities to come tonight. They brought in some musicians to mix with the group like [One Direction](#), [Fifth Harmony](#), [Cody Simpson](#), [Vazquez Sounds](#), and some of the Disney's Circle of Stars that sang Do You Want To Build A [Snowman](#) (from the movie "Frozen"). Everybody was told the disguised Young Pioneers had already gone home.

It was a quiet gathering of about 200 people around the pool. Summer, Jacob, Connie, Tracy, Molly, Lupe and Austin were on air mattresses laying out on the water doing absolutely nothing. Travis, Sophia, Nellie, and the Musk boys were doing slides. About half of the music artists were sliding and half were floating out with Lupe and her group. The adults were busy socializing and snacking on some delicious hors d'oeuvres that Jack had beautifully laid out on the tables.

The evening finished up early for the girls. It was a little after 9pm. Tony was in the water next to Lupe. "Mija, wake up. You must have had a hard day. I think it's time to go to bed, baby." Lupe cracked one eyelid open and slowly said "Ok, that's a good idea. Let's go." Lupe turned to Connie and said "It's been a real slice, catch you later girl." "Later" mumbled half asleep Connie. By then Sophia and Nellie were laying out with Connie. "Connie, Sophia, Nellie. We need to hit the sack, too" urged Norma. By 9:45 all the kids were back in their rooms, already showered and getting into bed. Goodnight.

They all slept in late the next morning. In Norma's clan, Nellie was the first to wake up at about 10:30am. "I can't wait to ride the roller coaster and feed the birds like mom promised." Nellie quietly watched some TV while the others were stirring and trying to stay asleep. At eleven Connie's cell phone rang. "Connie, this is Lupe. You awake yet?" "Wow, what time is it?" "It's eleven and I'm hungry. Let's get something to eat and then go to the museum. The new Young Pioneer displays will already be up in the Recognition section. And the amusement park is calling us. Can't you hear it?" "Ok, Lupe. Let's do it, girl. We'll be ready in thirty minutes. Let's meet downstairs in the lobby." "Great, see you then."

In the meantime Lupe called Tracy, Molly, Summer, and Jacob to get them to come along. Jacob and Summer said it would be safer if they went separately because they didn't cover their

faces. If they were all together, people could easily figure out the other three Young Pioneers. Lupe agreed and said "Well you guys have a good time and we'll see you later."

At 11:30 the girls with Austin and Travis made it downstairs with their parents and Larry. They went over to the B&B restaurant and had a nice lunch before going to the Peoples Monument and Museum. Larry had a fake scruffy beard to hide his identity. With the shades and big hat, Norma almost didn't recognize him when he came to her door. She had changed her hair and was wearing a baggy outfit as a modest disguise.

Elon said for security reasons he would go separately. He doesn't believe in disguises so he's going to visit the museum with a contingent of friendly bodyguards surrounding him and his family. And he doesn't want museum patrons to visually associate the others as important people if they were walking with him. The same was true with the other old pioneers like Mark and Serge.

[Off to the museum again](#)

At 12:30 Norma and the group boarded the bus and it took about 45 minutes to get there. "Wow, why is traffic so heavy" wondered Tony. "Maybe everybody wants to see the new Young Pioneer displays at the museum" said Connie. "I don't think so. That's silly." said Lupe. As the museum came into view Nellie said "Look at the long line of cars to get in." It took another 15 minutes to get the bus a relatively short distance to the entrance of the first building. Norma looked at Larry and whispered "Make sure your invisible security is all around us today. I don't want anything to happen. OK, LARRY?" Larry smiled and whispered "It's already in place, baby. We're just a group of happy tourists. But if we are identified and harassed we'll have a group of agents around us instantly. The feather light Kevlar clothing I had made for us is also a good safety measure. It looks and feels like regular cloth." "I have to admit I'm uncomfortable about this, Larry." "It'll be ok, Norma. We can't run and hide from possible dangers. We have to face them head on. Both of us learned that years ago. So are you ready to go outside? Everybody's leaving the bus." "Ok, let's go." As the people were leaving the bus, the driver said he heard the Recognition Building is very crowded. And it would be wise to see the new Young Pioneer displays much later today or even tomorrow. Connie thought "Hell, why go to a building when three of them are standing right next to me." Only Connie, Sophia, and Nellie knew the Tres Bandidas had protected themselves with their inventions. Lupe had a tiny cellphone sized device in her pocket that can instantly teleport her away from trouble. If others are touching her skin they'll go too. Tracy took some power enhancing drugs before she left. With Molly's help Tracy also recently discovered how to make her body impervious to bullets and knife cuts. And Molly had a small cellphone looking device that can communicate to her via an ear bud about what the people and animals around her are feeling and thinking. The device will constantly survey the crowd in her proximity and will alert her to any unusual feelings or behavior.

Larry said to the group "I promised Nellie we would go to the aviary and feed the birds. Do you mind if we go there first?" Everybody agreed and off they went.

"Mom, look at me" said a gleeful Nellie as she was feeding a beautiful macaw on her arm. Molly spoke softly to Tracy "They're telling me they are very happy living in this enclosure.

Friendly people feeding them. A safe place to sleep. And some of the people are very entertaining. Who could ask for more." Tracy said "Freedom." Connie heard and said "Freedom is a very subjective thing." Lupe said "That's right. I think only humans would prefer freedom and a difficult life vs. being caged and happy." Sophia chimed in and said "Why not freedom to have the power to make a good life? That's what this museum is all about, you sillies." Austin who was also holding a beautiful indigo and red macaw said "This guy doesn't want to do any heavy philosophizing. He just wants my peanut." And, besides aren't we all in a cage called earth? Lupe looked at Austin and said "That's what you call perception vs. reality, my handsome cowboy. Because we have the freedom to question, learn, and discover, Galileo showed us that we aren't the center of the universe. Now because of the work of our first new Young Pioneer we can now go to other planets in just minutes. See freedom gives us the ability to move from blind or superstitious perceptions to lucid realities." "Yeah, I guess" said Austin as he smiled and winked at Lupe. Norma saw the kids standing around talking and said "Come on and let the birds get on your arms. They're used to people, they'll let you pet them." So the kids went back to the important business of being kids.

Tony got a call on his cell phone in the aviary. He walked to the side and talked for a little while. Then he called his daughter over and said "There's somebody who would like to speak to you." Lupe took the phone and said "Hello." Then there was a pause... "It's been years since I've talked to you, mother. ...Why now? ...Why at all?" Her mother's name is Violet because of her beautiful violet eyes. Violet said she felt very guilty about leaving them. But she thought she was going to die if she stayed. And her family wouldn't let Lupe come with her. Violet said she never forgave her family for that. She said it would have been easy to find a man that would take her in, but she couldn't do it knowing Tony and Lupe were out there somewhere. She said she went into a deep depression and had to be hospitalized. But slowly over some years she got better. She was working at a Wal-Mart now and yesterday on the TVs in the back of the store she saw this girl in a disguise talking about what happened in her life. "I just knew it was you, Lupe. And you're right. I'm not a strong person. You got all your daddy's traits. Thank God." Lupe said "So how did you know dad's phone number?" Violet said "A national phone number registry was recently put up on the internet and your dad didn't put a block on his number. And every phone has a GPS tracking signal. I live in the District of Columbia now. So I drove to the museum hoping I could see you. It doesn't matter if you're the girl I saw on TV yesterday. What matters is I'm now well enough to talk to you. I'm in the atrium right now. Do you mind if I see you? ...Please." Then Violet started sobbing a little. Lupe's kneejerk reaction was to tell her to get lost and to leave her alone. Lupe paused for a moment and said "Stay there where you're at. I can see you through the aviary glass." Then Lupe called Molly over and asked her to walk out there and stand close to Violet and take a reading on her. Molly agreed and walked around Violet and then back into the aviary. Molly said "I see extreme sadness and heartache over the loss of something very important. OK?" Lupe hugged Molly and said "Gracias, Bandida." Lupe then asked Tracy and Molly to watch her back as she talked to her mom just outside in the atrium. "This is a very emotional moment for me. I need you guys. "Pues vamonos (*Then let's go*). Las Tres Bandidas, juntos somos mas fuerte que nada (*Together we are stronger than anything*)." said Tracy in a cute White southern girl accent. Then all three walked out with Lupe leading the way. She said "Hi, Violet. Yes, that was me you saw. But my identity has to be kept a secret. Can you be silent about it? Will you be silent about it?" Violet said "Of course, I don't want anything to happen to you." Lupe turned to Molly and asked if Violet was telling the truth. She

said "Yes." Lupe said "Good, but this is a very serious thing so we have to be sure you won't accidentally spill the beans. You lost your parent card four years ago when you left us. It demonstrated that you're a weak person. I don't mind being your friend, but we will have to erase the old me and dad from your memory. We can do that kind of stuff where I work. Would that be ok with you, Violet?" Violet thought for a second and said "Of course, anything to protect my baby." "Ok, mom. This will be the last time you'll know me as your daughter. But since you live alone there is no reason not to be living in Las Cruces near where I live. You'll be working at the Wal-Mart over there. It's a big one near the freeway. And the people in that town are very nice. You'll love it there. Then we can be friends. Ok?" Violet agreed. Lupe hugged her and kissed her on the cheek. As she was hugging her, Violet said "Thank you, Lupe. I hope I'm a better friend than I was a mother." "Mom, I couldn't have had a better mother. It's just that you left us. How could anybody with a heart and a soul do that?" Violet said "I tried to commit suicide several times after I left. And later I tried to find both of you, but I failed. Leaving was the worst mistake I have ever made in my life. I didn't want to live anymore. Then I started having dreams. I saw the Virgin of Guadalupe come to me and tell me it was going to be ok. She said my baby was doing fine and not to worry anymore. I believed she actually talked to me. So, I've prayed to her every day for this opportunity." Lupe looked into her eyes and said "Ok, mom. We'll make it work." Then she hugged her one last time and said "May God be with us. Goodbye, Mommy." Lupe called Larry over and explained to him the situation. He contacted an agent nearby and she escorted Violet out of the building and into a chopper. The next day Violet would be at White Sands research center having those memories erased. And the next day she would have a nice home and a good job at Wal-Mart in Las Cruces compliments of the daughter she abandoned four years ago. Lupe also talked to her dad about turning off the GPS feature on his phone. Tony was very angry with Violet, but he knew Lupe's happiness, whatever it was, had to come first before any of his feelings. The first request Lupe made was to have an agent shadow her to make sure she was safe.

The three Bandidas then went back into the atrium to continue feeding the birds. But Lupe was too emotional. She went up to Connie and pulled her aside away from everybody and held her and started crying like a baby. "What's wrong, Lupe?" "I just saw my mother. I missed her so much these last four years. She looks as beautiful and her voice and embrace are as soothing as the day she left us. After she left it was like there was this giant hole in my spirit," confided Lupe as she was hugging Connie and weeping. Connie eventually got Lupe to relax. They spent some time talking about it. She knew just what to say to calm Lupe down. "At least now that hole isn't there anymore. You can't risk your mom blabbing to the world about you, but you will have her there in the same town. Hey, maybe she can even live next door. That way you'll have an excuse to strike up a friendship with her. You can bring her in as close and as far away as you like. I know you have a farm, but you could also have a house in the city next door to Violet." Lupe smiled and said "You know just the right things to say, girl." as she was wiping the tears away. Connie smiled and said "Vamonos mi compa (*my close friend*), let's go back and feed some birds. When they returned to the group, Norma quietly asked Connie if everything was ok. Connie said "Everything's cool, mom, but it has to remain private." Norma said "Whatever it is I know that you being a good friend is what Lupe needs the most."

About fifteen minutes later Nellie and the rest had enough of bird feeding and wanted to do something else. "Well, what do you kids want to do now?" asked Tracy's mom and dad. Larry

spoke up and said "There's a symposium going on in a brand new theatre in the back of the Betterments complex. Lupe was saying she would like to learn more about buying property from of the asset repository program." Norma said "And a speaker is going to talk about the clothing manufacturing repatriation program. We're moving to El Paso which is a large clothing manufacturing center, and I want to know more about it." Bubba said "I'd like to learn more about the land purchase thing and also about the coastal desalinization projects and the piping of water up to San Antonio." Tracy and Molly said they hadn't seen the displays in the Betterments building. And there were several things they wanted to look at. So everybody agreed to split up and then get back together at the freedom train restaurant at 5:30pm.

[The symposium](#)

A speaker had just finished when the theater doors opened. Norma and the gang went in and found some good seats. Next up was the person who is in charge of the desalinization project in America. She also oversees the construction of pipes to bring water to arid areas of the US and also to places that have experienced periodic drought. After everybody was seated and the doors closed, the speaker quickly walked onto the stage. "Hi, my name is Mercy Salazar and my job is getting clean drinkable water to areas of the US that don't have enough. This project is truly an opening up of all of America for agriculture. As you'll hear throughout this entire symposium, money is no longer an impediment to getting things done. If we the People want it, we will dedicate the resources and workers to do it.

Since the Big Change we have made significant improvements to the design and construction of desalinization plants. Again money is no longer a problem, but wasting time and resources are. We can now build a desalinization plant in about eight months that will deliver one billion gallons of water per day. And we currently have ten plants under construction along our coastline on the western part of the US and ten are being built between Corpus Christi and Galveston. When they are completed over twenty billion gallons of good water a day will be flowing into our country from the earth's oceans. In ten years we anticipate a nationwide system that will deliver over 100 billion gallons of water a day. The increased water will bring agriculture to desert areas. And, we will have more water vapor released into the atmosphere over these arid areas that will create more rainfall across the western United States. But the greatest technological advancement is the piping of water. Over a hundred years ago water pipes were iron. Then we went with steel. Then asbestos. Then to PVC. Now we have a new polymer blend that is almost indestructible from sun and water and anything else you can think of. It also bends a little, which is important because over several hundred years the earth especially near the surface will move around. And when we install pipes over known faults like the San Andreas fault we are laying the pipe above ground with flexible joints. But what I really like is the fact that we are making the pipe at the site where it is being laid. We have mobile pipe factories that are twelve feet wide and seventy feet long. Each pipe joint is fifty feet long. It takes 10 minutes to make a pipe using a huge sophisticated 3D printer. It takes about 10 minutes for it to completely cool down then it's ready to be laid. We spend all night making these pipes and then we lay the pipe during the day. And each joint is flexible. It will bend up to 20 degrees and expand and contract up to five feet. We have thirty of these 3D plants at every pipe laying site. So we are laying three rows of pipe about 9 miles a day." Mercy continued for about 15 minutes giving more specific details. Then she opened the floor to questions. Bubba asked if they were piping water to the San Antonio area. Mercy responded "We are currently laying

pipes up to Bexar County and the surrounding area. That area has been very undependable for rain, so this water will be a life saver for the people and the crops." She looked at how big and tanned Bubba was and said "Are you a farmer in San Antonio?" Bubba replied "Yes ma'am. And that water will help my pasture so I can have more cattle grazing which translates to more steaks on everybody's table." Mercy smiled and said "Now all we need to do is lower the cholesterol in beef." Bubba laughed and said "I'm sure somebody somewhere is working on that." With no more questions from the audience, Mercy said "If there are no more questions this session will end. Thank you very much for coming and spread the word that water is on its way." The audience applauded and Mercy had some flyers passed out for the patrons to take home.

"Nellie asked Norma "Can we go now. This stuff is kind of boring." "Not just yet honey, a man is going to talk about clothing manufacturing. In a couple months we're moving to the largest clothing manufacturing area in the United States. Nellie made a scrunched up face and said in a questioning tone "El Paso?" "That's right, honey. And you'll get to help momma design shoes. Would you like to do that?" Sophia said "That's what I wanna do, mom. Let Nellie do something else." Nellie said "Yeah, I wanna design skateboards. And I want to protect animals in the wild. Can I do that?" "I don't see why not, baby." Lupe sitting next to Austin asked "Are you doing ok, Cowboy?" "Sure, it says on the brochure that after the discussion on clothing manufacturing a lady is coming in to talk to us about purchasing land out of the repository. There's a limitation on acreage that can be owned, and dad has reached his. So I'm wondering if a 15 year old like me can start buying property." Lupe said "I don't see why not, and if not, well we will just have to request a change with a vote by the People. They probably respect me enough to put it through."

Everybody is seated and the doors are closed. From the left side of the stage walked up a short husky Hispanic male about 62 years of age. "Hello. My name is Pilar Charo. I used to work for Levis. Then I worked for a very wealthy family in Guatemala. They had a textile factory and a clothing manufacturing facility. We made clothes for all the major brands. Before the Big Change, companies like Levis, Wrangler, Arizona Jeans, Abercrombie, Gap, Izod, Christian Dior, and just about every other clothing manufacturer subcontracted their work out. And we did a lot of it. It was cheaper because a second tier manufacturer like us could pay very low wages and treat their employees like sh-t. My boss, the owner, had the president of Guatemala in his back pocket so there were no worries about an employee uprising. My salary was over a million dollars a year but I could only stomach working there for five years. When the Big Change happened I volunteered to be part of bringing clothing manufacturing back to the United States. And after four years it's worked out very well. El Paso was an ideal spot for repatriation. First, on a selfish side, I live there. But the real reason is El Paso has an enormous amount of warehousing space that could easily be turned into manufacturing. The giant warehouses were there because of the maquiladora concept that was put in place decades ago. It was set up to screw Americans out of jobs. The materials would move to Mexico where they were fabricated. Then the finished goods plus all the scraps were sent back to the US and put into warehouses in El Paso. God Bless the effing old Congress for screwing us out of good jobs just to squeeze more profits out for the owners who were bribing them.

Anyway, I went to the major clothing label corporations like Levis in San Francisco and told them flat out that I needed their manufacturing equipment back here in the States. At first Levis balked, so I put the entire family in jail for 30 days. Then they told me they would just leave the country and live somewhere else. They didn't care because their company was worldwide. And since Levis America would be employee owned they didn't care to live here anymore. I told them I don't care where the hell you live. I just need the machinery back here in the United States. If that means buying it back from your second tier contractors, then you do it. Period. I just want all Levi products sold in America to be made in America, or we will start killing off your family one person at a time." The audience gasped. "That's right. I had to play hardball with these spoiled prima donnas who had an inflated view of themselves, their talent, and their importance. I discovered all the owners of these top level clothing businesses were nothing but spoiled little brats. So I had to treat them accordingly. And don't worry. I didn't kill anybody. Or should I say we kept the lessons of death down to a minimum. But there were a few places where we had to bring in several thousand American soldiers to seize the machinery and take it back to the states. And as I'm sure you saw in the news over the past few years our soldiers sometimes had to kill some of the opposing military leaders in these third world countries. Whenever we could, we shortcut the process by surgically moving into where the country's president and family were living. It was fun. We put harnesses on them, then an airplane flew over with grappling hooks that lifted them away and eventually to the US. Let me tell you, holding the president and the heads of the military of Guatemala at gunpoint in Miami as we took what was rightfully ours was excellent justice. These clowns are just puppets in these third world countries. But bringing machinery back from China was a problem. To get around their refusals, we just manufactured new machines. It took a little longer but we really didn't want to invade China over machinery. And besides, the Chinese are good people. It's their ruling class who are the evil bastards with their selfish ruthless and heartless Central Committee. But as you've seen recently in the news, China is undergoing a dramatic change. Hopefully for the better. We'll see. And you might want to pray for the brave mothers of China who are making it all happen.

But let's get back to about three and a half years ago. We did accomplish something much more important. We were able to lure a considerable amount of manufacturing management and engineers out of China. Their skills and knowledge were what we really needed. And, they jumped at the chance to have a good life here in America." Pilar talked for about 25 minutes explaining the process and he passed out literature covering clothing manufacturers in El Paso and other hubs throughout the US. Then he opened the floor to any questions. Norma asked "How hard would it be to start my own shoe and boot manufacturing business in El Paso?" Pilar laughed and said "El Paso is the quality boot manufacturing capital of the world. China has greater output but because of their Central Committee's pure profit motives, it's all crap. A hundred years ago China could pride itself with its beautiful handcrafted goods, but sadly not anymore.

And only goods made in America can be sold in America. You wouldn't have a difficult time at all since there is a large pool of experienced shoe and boot makers. And the People's Bank encourages prospective entrepreneurs to immerse themselves in a community that has the resources for success. They will also provide the necessary training and supportive people and anything else you would need to help you along in your first year. We start businesses to be successful. These days the only reason for failure is the buying public simply doesn't like your

product." Norma looked at Larry and said "Guess what we're going to do." Larry smiled and agreed. After all the questions, Pilar ended the session with this: "I cannot emphasize enough how important it is for us Americans to make everything we consume. We can never and we will never be dependent on others for our needs. Period. Thank you all for coming and maybe I'll be seeing some of you in El Paso" as he grinned and pointed to Norma.

After the session ended Norma told Larry "I like Pilar. He's a get things done kind of guy. Could work a little on his finesse though." Larry said "We saw how well Pilar was doing with his repatriation assignments so we had all the other workers with repatriation tasks to adopt his methodology. We really had to play hardball with these people."

Lupe said as she was looking at a handout "Look papi, next up are some people who are going to talk to us about the repository program." Just as she finished saying it, the doors to the theater closed and a man walked onto the stage. "Hi, my name is John Adams. I'm part of the management team that makes sure nobody has over 50 million dollars of net worth or what everybody calls wealth. My group seizes the excess and then places it into a repository. You know, right after the Big Change the People were having a difficult time deciding who to include and what wealth to include in the calculation. For example let's take Michael Dell of Dell Computers. He lived part of the time outside the US, and a substantial amount of his wealth was outside the US. He's was an American citizen. And as a side bar reminder, we only allow American citizens to own property both tangible and real estate here in America. So the question was, do we take all of Michael's assets on earth except for 50 million? Do we only look at his wealth in the US and take everything except for 50 million that is located here? Or do we take everything of his in the US knowing he has way over 50 million outside the country and just let him have all his wealth located outside the US? And under what circumstances would we allow Michael to live here. Our answer was straight forward. If an American citizen wanted to enjoy the safety and other benefits of being an American citizen and live in or even visit America, that person had to relinquish all of their wealth except for 50 million, no matter where it was located. So if Michael Dell wanted to keep his holdings overseas, he would have to live outside the US and never return. Period. On top of that, it was impractical for us to seize assets like real estate outside the US."

"See Americans knew we had something very special going on here. We were offering ourselves a kind of life that was next to priceless and couldn't be found anywhere else on earth. We also knew that there was going to be turmoil and chaos across the earth after we made the Big Change. We knew the people across the world would eventually follow suit by toppling their governments and becoming direct democracies themselves. It was just a matter of time. People like Michael had no real allegiance to any country. He was Jewish, so his allegiance was to his People first. With the extermination 75 years ago of over six million Jewish men, women, and children, I don't blame him. But he made the wrong choice. He left the country like countless Jews did across thousands of years as a way to survive. But his survival vision was looking back and following the traditional modus operandi instead of realizing that the people of the world are eventually going to become one and live as one. Mr. Dell had all his assets in America seized. His US dollars overseas became worthless. So all he had was large foreign land holdings and a sizable foreign art collection, and of course stock in foreign corporations. Michael and many other very wealthy American Jews purchased some land on an island country

out in the Pacific to achieve their Utopia. They developed a community on the west end of that island. Remember Ayn Rand's Atlas Shrugged where the super-rich escaped to a hideaway and finally had a good life. Pure fiction. Michael and his group did ok for a couple of years. But last year the native islanders became very irritated with their attitude and their small army protecting these prima donnas. So one night, using military supplies and training provided by Qatar, they attacked that section of the island and slaughtered them all. This sad scenario played out for many ultra-wealthy Americans who opted to live outside the safety and protection of the US. They eventually lost their wealth and many of them lost their lives. See, after the Big Change America became the beacon of freedom for people across the earth. Like in the prophetic movie "V for Vendetta" there were countless freedom fighters using terrorist tactics to fight their oppressive societies. Many of these societies have already crumbled and we with our technical expertise are helping them become true direct democracies. Personally, I can see several hundred years from now the people of the earth having a one world government. A government truly of, for, and by all the people. We will become the earth tribe. Yesterday I saw a young 14 year old girl has enabled us to travel and populate other hospitable planets. I believe for it to be successful, we all have to eventually be in this together. You can get a glass of water and put insoluble particles inside. Stir it up and it becomes what they call a suspension instead of a solution. We don't want to blend ourselves into one people or one dissolved solution. Retaining all our identities and cultures is important. But we need to consider ourselves as one whole dedicated to supporting each other for the greater good of all humankind."

Lupe turned and looked at Connie sitting next to her and said "I think he's right." Connie smiled and shook her head. Connie realized she was alive in the most important chapter in the history of humankind. What we do from this point forward will have far reaching effects and her friend sitting next to her will be one of the most important players. She knew she would be smack dab in the middle of it. The prospect was very exciting, like fireworks going off in her spirit.

John continued for about fifteen minutes outlining the process they went through to identify ownership of assets. Almost all individuals trying to hide property held the property in shell or empty corporations. In other words the corporations were not businesses. They were just vehicles that held property. John and his people eventually identified all these properties and seized them. One device John used was attorneys. Attorneys traditionally were the ones who set up the ways of hiding assets for their clients. John's group approached every attorney in America and demanded they help him or they would go to jail for the rest of their lives with plenty of shock treatments. After that happened there was an avalanche of properties identified. "Well, I have taken enough of your time. The pamphlets I passed out describe in detail our methods of identifying excess property and our formulas for determining wealth. Thank you for your time. I'm sorry but I've run a little long so I can't take any questions because the next person up is waiting over there and she's giving me the eye. Thanks again and hope you have a good day."

The next speaker came up and said "John was a little mistaken about the time. We are going to take a 15 minute break for stretching and other things you may want to do. My name is Nancy Plese and I'll be talking to you about how we sell property out of our repository. Thank you and see you back here in a little while."

Connie turned to Lupe and said "Look, there's Hanna with Mark." "Where?" "Right over there down four rows." Lupe said "You're not thinking what I'm thinking are you?" Connie laughed and said "Let's do it!" Connie, Sophia, Nellie, Lupe, Tracy, Molly, and Hanna had been practicing several dance numbers. And they were pretty good. So Lupe ran over to talk to Hanna. Hanna turned to Mark and he shook his head and then looked back at the other girls staring pensively at him. He smiled and then pointed to the stage. So the girls quickly ran down the aisle and onto the stage. Connie pulled out her Mp4 holographic player and put it up next to the microphone on the podium at the side of the stage. All the girls got into position then Connie flipped on the player to Michael Jackson's [Billie Jean](#). Their moves were almost perfect. The audience joined in clapping as they were dancing. After a cool ending they received a standing O from the crowd. Lots of people had even gathered at the doors to see what was going on. The girls stood together, took a bow and then ran off the stage to sit down. After they were seated Norma said "I didn't know my girls were practicing their moves. Has Hanna been teaching you? You were really good up there. You girls woke the crowd up, baby. They should hire you to dance at every break. I've got to admit these speakers can get really boring at times." Connie laughed and said "See mom, I'm the spark and Lupe and Sophia and Nellie are the pistons and Hanna is the gasoline. When I light it up all hell breaks loose." Norma laughed. Lupe was a little sad and said "I wish Molly and Tracy could have been here." Sophia made sure she was sitting next to Travis. Travis turned to her and said "Wow, Sophia, you can really dance. You guys looked like seasoned professionals just doing what came easy." Sophia enjoyed the compliment and said "Believe me, it wasn't easy. We practiced many hours using Skype to get it down perfectly. You should join us, Travis. We need a handsome White boy to complement our group." Travis said "No way, Sophia, this White boy has no rhythm." And they both laughed.

At the end of the break and when everybody was seated again, Nancy came up to the podium and said "Let's thank those girls once again for the much appreciated service of waking us up." Then she started clapping and the audience joined in. "My name is Nancy Plese. And I'm pleased to be here today to go over how to purchase from the repository. It's a subject that everybody wants to know more about. I had some helpers pass out pamphlets to all of you to use as reference. The images I bring up on the large screen behind me will also help."

"All repository property is listed in detail on the internet. The tangible property is held in warehouses in Nevada, Arizona, and New Mexico. These areas have the low humidity needed to keep the property rust and mildew free. When we first take in a tangible item, we appraise it to arrive at a dollar value and an intrinsic value. Some items go to museums and the rest are sold as soon as possible. Some items don't sell so we give them away. We first check with schools to see if they would want them. Then they go out to the general public. I'm sure many of you already know the process but for some of you this is completely new. So, I'll go through it step by step. First, all properties listed have a complete profile. In the profile we indicate if the parcel is available for purchase.

Some of the real estate is held for further determination of its status. That's because some property will be part of nature preserves. Some will be part of our national parks. Some parcels will go into non-renewable resource preserves. An example is ancient forest land and even regular timber land. We have parcels with rich mineral deposits like coal that are set aside for the future."

"But with these set asides came some problems. Immediately after the Big Change certain groups of people were up in arms about what they perceived as shutting down their livelihood. We sent teams to assuage the concerns of these groups. For example coal mines in Kentucky were shut down. The people thought they were going to starve to death because they wouldn't have a job. That was even after they started receiving their \$10,000 a month deposits. They felt if they weren't working, their income would be cut off. And at first there weren't enough jobs being posted in the areas where they were living and they absolutely didn't want to move, especially to another state. So the first thing we had them understand is if they were willing and ready to work they would continue to receive their money. Second, we said we would bring jobs to them so they wouldn't have to move. But it would take a while to build manufacturing facilities and build service businesses. It was just a problem of logistics. There were many areas in the country where we had this problem. The people in these low job areas finally understood when we started hiring them to build factories and service providing structures. And we gave priority to hiring locals first to work in these businesses. This approach, this methodology worked out very well. See, the Big Change halted capitalism as we knew it. In people's minds that was hard enough to work through. But requiring people to be uprooted from their hometowns especially in rural areas was just too much to ask."

When we have land for sale, we are careful about upsetting the local population by having individuals from out of the area purchasing large tracts of land or commercial buildings which can cause anger from the locals. Whether we want to admit it or not, people are very tribal. Outward distinctions such as race and language and inward traits like religion, intellectual abilities or gender bias are things that people gravitate towards. For example, having a large group of people who believe in open nudity move to a community of fervent Baptists would cause huge problems. So we thoroughly investigate the impact of all transactions before we sell any property out of our repository. The People of the United States understand that we are a hodgepodge of everything you can imagine. We just don't want any problems because of caustic mixing of cultures. But, and this is a big but... We guarantee human rights as laid out in the Constitution and its Amendments. So we don't allow bigotry of any sort. I know. It's like talking out of both sides of my mouth. But there is a difference. And when there is a genuine case of bigotry but the people don't realize it, we don't just jam the law down their throats. We educate and sensitize them to be understanding and more open minded. Like if a group of Muslims want to live in a community, that's ok. But forcing a woman to cover herself is not. Requiring Muslims to marry within their faith is not. Punishing Muslims for leaving their faith is absolutely not ok. And Muslim [Honor](#) killings of wives and daughters are totally and completely unacceptable. These are the cases where we execute the perpetrators like the husbands and the mullahs. Then we deport the entire Muslim community the hell out of our country. She paused for a second... I'm sorry, I guess I'm still a little angry about what happened a year ago."

"Ok, I got little off track. Let's get back to the process. Everybody is limited to the amount of land they can own. Urban land ownership is limited to two acres. The maximum homes you may own is three. You cannot rent out your extra homes, but you can trade living time with other people without the exchange of money. And we have an internet site dedicated to vacation home occupancy for people who would like to trade like this. If you are new to farming the most

you can purchase is 200 acres. If you demonstrated yourself as a successful farmer then the limitation is three sections with one section being farm land and the other two sections being pasture land. We encourage farmers to put in ponds and small lakes. If they do, we allow them to go over their limits on acreage. They can build a forty acre lake and exceed their ownership limits if the historic rainfall will support it. And through our US Army Corps of Engineers we are working closely with farmers and ranchers to carve out these ponds and lakes."

"The US has areas that typically do not receive much rainfall, like the high Chihuahuan desert in the southwestern part of the United States. Some desert areas can only support one cow for every hundred or more acres. Like in the past decades we continue to lease government land to ranchers who have property that abuts the government land. Presently we are bringing water to these desert areas. When that happens the irrigated property will have the traditional ownership limitations times five. We did it because not many people want to live out in the middle of nowhere. I've traveled by car all over west Texas, Arizona, New Mexico, Utah, Nevada, and other arid areas. In some places you can drive for hours and not see anything but desert. So we need strong able bodied people living in these areas to increase our agricultural production. Thus, newly irrigable desert farmland has an increased ownership limitation of two square miles per farmer for crops and ten sections for pasture. That is a lot of land so we require farmers to have significant prior experience before they can step into a farming project as large as ten sections. The water from the plants on the west coast are just starting to irrigate desert areas in California. What we're seeing is multiple farm families coming together in a co-op fashion to handle such large farms. And it's working out very well."

"Ok. So if a person wants to buy land they would first peruse the list of available real estate on the internet. A property will be listed for three months at a given price. We don't necessarily sell to the first bidder. And we didn't want people to offer over the price we had listed. See money doesn't matter anymore. Instead we have all of the interested parties explain what they will do with the property. The People (with a capital P) are very much interested in the environment and the people that already live and work in that locale. For example, we don't want a busy factory going up near schools and residential communities. Before the Big Change, every property in America was classified as to type, like residential, light commercial, heavy industrial, etc. This practice still continues except now we consider mother earth, wildlife, and us humans and our happiness. We award the sale to who we believe would be the best stewards of the property. All the land purchased out of the repository has to be put to use in some way. Urban property has to be developed, even if it's just a home. The land can't be wasted, but at the same time we applaud all developments that have landscaped open areas for people to enjoy. Rural property must be developed for agriculture, recreation, or as a wildlife preserve. For example, there is a large parcel just north of San Antonio, Texas that has large herds of African animals. Kids love to feed the animals out of their vehicles. There are only 5,000 Rhinos left in Africa. Animals like the Rhino are slowly becoming extinct. We Americans are moving these endangered animals to the US. Parts of our country are rapidly becoming the African Savanna. Becoming a direct democracy enabled us to help these beautiful creatures. We have plans to wall a large parcel of thousands of acres and place several genetically diverse gorilla families on the property. Without our efforts there would be no gorillas on earth except in zoos."

She continued "We prefer new commercial construction to only be in cities or within a mile of a city or town. Nancy continued with the details of purchasing real estate for another twenty minutes. Then she opened the floor to questions. Austin was pleasantly surprised when Nancy told him that people of any age can own property, but it still has to be put to some use. Once it's purchased, it can't just sit there. Austin turned to Lupe and said "Except near the Rio Grande River, the area around Las Cruces is all desert, right?" Lupe's eyes twinkled and said "I was thinking the same thing, Cowboy. I'm sure those giant water pipes will be out there in the next couple years." Austin made his eyebrows go up and down and said "Maybe so...." There were so many questions that Nancy had to cut it short since she was over her allotted time. "Thank you for coming and my email address is on the front page of the handout. Bye." As she left the stage everybody stood up and applauded.

Larry turned to Norma and said "How's it going. Would you like to stay for some more?" "Yes, I would. This sheet says the next talk covers the areas of most concern after the Big Change. And now almost four years later we can look back and see what we did right and what we could have done differently. The talk is titled "How we made the Big Change work, an overview." Larry looked into her beautiful green eyes and said "I helped put this one together." Norma in a raised voice said "Larry, you never told me about that." "There's a lot of things I don't talk to you about because most of it isn't very interesting or any fun. It's just stuff that has to be done." Norma's eyes looked concerned and she replied "Honey, I'm interested in everything. Even the mundane. In fact I've been known to make boring lots of fun. Just ask my munchkins." Then she kissed him as she put her hand on his midsection and pulled him closer. Larry melted and as he was recovering said "I shouldn't tell you about more things more often." Norma said "Do you remember what I said to you when we first met?" "Norma you had me so captivated, that moment I met you is just a blur." She laughed and said "I gently squeezed your forearm and said I came to see stuff in a building and now God has blessed me by allowing me to touch a man, a real man, who helped make it happen." Larry said "That's very impressive. I didn't know you had an eidetic memory." "Only the important stuff, Babe." Larry responded "You know, I really like it when you call me babe." Then Norma kissed him again. And at the end of the kiss still with her mouth pressed against his, she looked into his eyes and said "Babe". Connie was sitting next to Norma "Gaa...roosss, mom! You two need to get a room or a bucket of cold water thrown on you. Disgusting!" Norma said "I'm sorry Connie, sometimes I just get carried away." Connie said "Yeah, Larry needs to carry you away to some place private where you two can do all the slurping you want without grossing us out." Norma said "Por favor cállate! (*Please shut up.*)" Norma turned to Larry and apologized. Larry put his mouth close to her ear and whispered "Maybe we should." And then he gently bit her earlobe. Norma giggled and pulled away a little and said "Don't do that. You know it sends chills up and down my body. Let's stop. I really want to hear this next talk you helped put together." Larry laughed and relented "Oookaaay".

The doors in the back of the theater were closed and the speaker came forward "Hi, my name is Scarlett Johansson." The audience started applauding. "Thank you, thank you very much. But I didn't come here today as an actress. I came here as a person who worked behind the scenes for almost four years to make this thing a success. First, I want you to know that I'm Jewish and not all Jews were like Michael Dell who abandoned us to live elsewhere with his accumulated riches. Since the Big Change, I and many other Jews like the founders of Google, Facebook, and Oracle have dedicated our lives 24/7 to seeing that this actually worked. Because we knew if it didn't it

could have turned into complete chaos. All of us were too smart and too determined to let that happen. We have been the new America for almost four years now."

"In the next hour, we're going to reflect back on some major things we did right and on some things we could have done differently. An hour is a long time, so instead of sounding like a college professor giving a dry lecture, I'll speak informally and I hope my little stories will keep it real and interesting."

"I remember being in meetings with Pioneers like Larry Page and Mark Zuckerberg and saying Oops did we do that. When Steve Urkel said it on the old TV show Family Matters it was funny. Not so much when we had the future of America in our hands. I remember Larry Page standing up at a meeting of several thousand people. He said blunders were not allowed. If you even feel like we are heading in that direction on any matter whatsoever please speak up loud and clear. And we did. But we also stumbled and committed some blunders that we had to work through. The wonderful thing was we now as a country could immediately vote on a proposition. It would be decided and then we would immediately start the implementation process. And when things weren't working out as we had planned, with another national vote, we would make changes immediately. It was great."

"Let's first look at our situation right after we voted for the Big Change. What was the most important thing that helped our new government be successful?" Scarlett looked down at a young woman dressed in a purple jogging outfit and asked her. "Hi. Yes you, the lady who looked like she just stepped out of a Sports Illustrated Magazine." The lady blushed and said she thought it was the amendment we had worked so diligently on for months and months before the big vote. Scarlett said "Absolutely. That amendment to the Constitution told us exactly what to do. Not in a detailed way but almost. It was the unforeseen problems that had to be worked out. In the grand scheme of things each problem was small, but not small at all to the people affected. And enough of these problems if unresolved could have wrecked the overall outcome."

"Remember immediately after the vote, we celebrated for several days? Then after the celebrations, came the stark reality. Before the vote, when we were scripting the amendment, Microsoft, Google, Facebook, Twitter, and Oracle came forward and said they would set up the voting mechanism as well as the other computer requirements as laid out in the amendment. A few days after the vote we looked to these companies. That was our most vulnerable point because we didn't know if these guys would hold true to their promises. Larry, Serge, Mark and their team members were the first ones to come forward. They laid out on a TV special what was going to happen regarding the voting process. The detailed process wasn't what we wanted to see. What we wanted to see was there were powerful people out there watching our backs and working to make it happen. That TV special that aired on all stations was the pivotal point. It allowed us to take a deep breath and relax. So Larry, Serge, and Mark, I'm sure you're out there somewhere in the audience today. Thank you for that gift and for your help during the last four years. And thank you Elon Musk, Edward Snowden, Larry Ellison, Bill and Melinda Gates, Jack Dorsey, and the countless thousands of others who rolled up their sleeves and worked to make our new government a success. And as I'm standing here I see many of the people I worked with sitting in the audience. This is being recorded on video for patrons to watch here at the Museum tomorrow and hopefully hundreds and even thousands of years from now."

"So back to the beginning. For some reason many people felt like a gaping hole was created when we did away with the conventional form of capitalism. There were a lot of people who really didn't believe the big change would work. But they thought anything would be better than what we had at the time. So our first blunder was not immediately providing adequate information about the change."

"Everybody's first concern was maintaining a least their current standard of living. That meant being sure they had a job. All of us were indoctrinated to the scenario of first comes a job...then comes money...then with the money we buy things to live. Even though we were the ones who constructed the amendment, we really didn't understand that money came first. But at the same time we also had to work. But when we worked it was to provide us with our consumable needs. Our work was no longer to make monetary profits for businesses. We just had a hard time getting that through our heads."

"Let me state it again. We used to work to make money for businesses. Now we had to understand we worked to meet our needs. Big difference. We used to think our basic needs were the traditional needs of food, shelter, clothing, family, and faith. Now we understand it's our happiness which includes everything that translates to ourselves, to others, and to our environment. Happiness goes deeper than the simple attainment of a regular and for most of us a subpar life that we had before the Big Change."

"Everybody, no matter how much they read or thought about it, they just couldn't wrap their heads around us paying us a minimum of \$10,000 a month without worrying about where the money was coming from. Many people even thought there was a fixed amount of money in the United States and the rich were hoarding it all. We couldn't grasp that after the Big Change money came from us as a whole people. As much or as little as we wanted to give ourselves as determined by a supermajority vote. The key point which we eventually understood is at any given time there are only so many products and services we can provide ourselves with. If thirty million of us wanted a new car each year, then we needed to make thirty million cars and that would have taken a lot of material and a huge labor force. That meant the resources, both material and human, needed to make those cars couldn't be used to make other things."

With all this understood, we had our giant computer analysis programs map out total raw material resource and labor force availability and develop thousands of what if scenarios. Through the amendment, we agreed to take it easy at first and not over indulge in anything and thus cause shortages. As you all know, some of the time it didn't work. Remember our immediate shortages of junk food and gas. But eventually we did get it into our heads to take it easy. An example was us making sure the northern part of the United States had an adequate supply of heating oil during the winter."

"As we progressed, in general terms, we chose food, water, energy, clothing, housing, transportation, communication, education, medicine, and the environment as our top priorities. Then we looked inside each category and decided the short term shortage avoidance methods to use, and then the long term approach to take. For example, most clothing was made outside the US. But we knew we had a huge labor force with experience in making clothing. San Antonio

and El Paso had thousands of people who used to make jeans. All they needed was the material, thread, pattern cutting machines, sewing machines, and a whole lot of tables. It took just a few weeks to bring this stuff to large empty warehouses. In a month they were turning out several thousand pairs of jeans a week. But we didn't have enough experienced people who knew how to make shirts, so we brought several hundred workers from Chihuahua, Mexico to teach Americans in Green Bay the art of shirt and blouse making. After a month of set up and practice, this group was turning out several thousand units a week. We did the same thing with dresses in New York City. We didn't think about it at the time but there were several hundred thousand first generation Americans in NYC who had tons of experience making textile products in their mother country. Underwear, dresses, shoes, hats, socks. You name it and they could do it. All they needed was the raw materials and the machines. So we had the clothing problem well in hand. Taking a long term view we understood that it was crucial to spread manufacturing across America. In almost every state we now have manufacturing facilities turning out all kinds of clothing. This is true with cars, farm machinery, dairy products, and so on."

"But there were other kinds of products that weren't so easy. The electronics industry was an example. At the time of the Big Change, Samsung in South Korea employed over 250,000 people making everything imaginable from TVs, to cameras, to music systems, to cell phones, etc. Right after the change, we had squat manufacturing capacity for electronics. The South Koreans depend heavily on us for food and raw materials like plastics and metals. They were also extremely worried about having to lay off thousands and thousands of people because our amendment requires us make everything we consume. But we altered our amendment a little to allow a trade deal with the South Koreans. They would continue to make products and we would trade our food and materials for all those goodies we have come to need like big flat screen TVs and the latest in cell phones. But at the same time we had them set up several small factories in the US to make the exact same products they were making in South Korea. So if they no longer could supply us then we could easily take up the slack by expanding production. See after the Big Change we realized if we completely stopped buying from places like South Korea, it would substantially hurt their economy. Many people would lose their jobs, become destitute and I'm sure many would have starved to death. We don't want to kill innocent people."

"Moving on to another thought. For example, many believed a person who worked for a company that didn't do much business shouldn't be paid \$10,000 a month. How did their efforts legitimize that much pay? And, it wouldn't be fair if another person working at another business making lots of money got paid the same. At least initially a lot of animus was out there with situations like these."

"See, it took a while for us to realize we were no longer living in a financial for-profit society. We eventually caught on that a fair, just, and equitable transition would take a while. And those gross disparities would eventually even out as we were transitioning to be a more efficient workforce.

But we are an impatient people. And that was another one of our blunders. The people assigned the task to repatriate manufacturing back to America didn't do it fast enough. We were being too nice about it and those companies who were supposed to comply with our demands were doing everything they could to slow it down or stop it. We didn't push hard enough or fast enough to

bring manufacturing back to America. The People were getting upset because of shortages because we didn't have enough manufacturing capacity. After a few months of snail like results, the People demanded we do it immediately. So we enlisted real nasty mean bastard types to get our manufacturing here and up and running. Pilar Charo, the man who spoke earlier, was one of these get things done right now kind of people. He brought clothing manufacturing back to America in only six months. He really got the attention of the super-rich people in Central America and South America when we captured the president of El Salvador and had to kill him because he wasn't cooperating. We had a media blitz in these small countries explaining step by step what we were doing. And, they liked it. We promised the people in these small countries that they would still have jobs even though we were moving manufacturing back to the US. We established trade agreements. The People of the US started trading directly with the people of Central America and Mexico. If the wealthy through their bought and paid for government "elected" officials got in the way, we just killed them. For example, we made agreements with the farm workers at the Dole Banana Company plantation in Guatemala.

The American citizen interests in all foreign businesses ended with the Big Change. The ultra-wealthy Americans like the owners of Dole moved out of the US to places like Guatemala thinking they would continue doing business as usual which meant mistreating the workers. And looking back you can see that didn't happen. The People of the United States had lost their patience. We needed food like bananas and coffee from Guatemala so we went in with our military and rounded up all the wealthy ex-Americans and the local fat cats and killed them. Problem solved. We created unions or co-ops of people for each farm. They owned the farm and we traded directly with them. And if they needed any competent administrative assistance we provided it. Once the people in Central and South America actually saw what we were doing they all wanted our help to become free from their repressive governments. Oh, and the US controlled all the radio, television, and newspapers in Central America. By that I mean the journalists were given the freedom to report events as they actually happened. Like in our country, no propaganda or brainwashing was allowed by the press anymore. And eventually we had enough from the bloated rich and the dirty politicians in both Mexico and Guatemala and are now turning these countries into direct democracies. And the citizens genuinely love us for it."

"Talking about propoganda, let's look at some lingering perceptions we had. The People didn't really understand that falsehoods were ingrained into our minds since we were children. For example before the Big Change, every national TV newscast gave information about the stock market. If stocks were plummeting that was bad for our economy which translated to bad for our country. People just didn't understand that the health of our nation was absolutely not tied to the stock market. See the stock market was nothing more than a sophisticated gambling casino. Every time you bought stock you were placing a bet."

"When we shut the stock markets down, everybody went crazy with fear. So, not adequately educating the People about how these changes we made would not hurt us... well, that was a huge blunder. For six months we were putting out fires of ignorance and fear everywhere in our country."

"The CBS evening news guy Scott Pelley came forward on his own during an evening telecast soon after the Big Change and summed it up very well when he said "The People directly paying

the People is great. With our giant computer systems, it won't cause out of control inflation because we can track and control all prices. And those items that are hard to come by will be rationed and production will be stepped up on these scarce products. Simply put, if you have total control of the game board, which we do now, you can basically do anything. So tell me... exactly what does the stock market have to do with our survival, life, and happiness? The answer obviously is NOTHING. And everybody knows American employees are going to be the new owners of all large corporations. No more separating the working class from the ownership class." All the other newscasters followed suit with the same story."

"You see, when the amendment was written, everybody was on board with closing the exchanges and transferring ownership to employees. But when it happened there were areas of panic in the US. Then after those fires were put out, the employees of corporations who were now the owners, started getting upset about not being able to sell their shares and make a profit. Again our blunder was not educating the public about this concept of ownership."

"For example, we had an employee of General Electric Company who worked on a refrigerator assembly line. He had a hundred shares of the company and he wrote an email asking us to please explain why he wasn't able to sell his stock? The answer, which he really didn't get, was... because we eliminated the divide between the working class and the ownership class. Americans do not make money anymore off the backs of other people! YOU get paid based on YOUR contribution to the effort. And as you can see, we pay ourselves very well. All healthcare and energy costs are free. No taxes anymore. Gasoline prices are capped at two dollars a gallon. Home and car prices have been slashed. In other words, no matter who you are and what you do, you're going to have a good life money wise. A whole lot more than your basic needs are met today. But many still didn't get it. This selfish extreme greed and avarice attitude was engrained into our minds for generations. Immediately giving everybody at least \$10,000 a month tax free was the best way to supplant that attitude. But even then we had to have many TV programs explaining just what was going on and how we made the shift to all of us making money based exclusively on our own efforts. And money was no longer the bindings and shackles the ultra-wealthy used to hold the rest of down. Before the Big Change, over one half of America owned less than two and a half percent of its wealth. The top 400 richest people in America had at least 14 times more wealth than 160 million Americans. We finally realized this gigantic disparity had to end. So now money is simply a tool to help give us a good life and to be used as a tool to stay within our means on a collective national level."

"And thank goodness our amendment included instructions about doing annual reviews. The fairness of rewarding people's efforts was paramount. We explained it and we reminded people constantly about this. No blunders here."

"I liked it when Mark Zuckerberg came up with the party idea about personal efforts. Per his suggestion, we started a monthly party at every company in our country. The party would be away from work in a relaxed environment. Later, we turned it into a weekend thing. During the morning and afternoon there would be informal discussions about where the company was headed and what could be improved upon. All the sessions were recorded to give recognition where it was due. No more stealing ideas from others. Then at night we have parties. The People liked Mark's idea. He said the times of a CEO standing up on a stage pontificating to

thousands of underlings in a theater had to go. Instead we all associate together as one large group. We know who the leaders are. We're not stupid. But the bonding and caring for one another shoots through the roof when we all treat each other as peers, as family."

"Then later we implemented Mark's suggestion that we have a city party every quarter. Each company has booths explaining what they do and how they are contributing to our happiness. And, of course there is plenty of food and beverage booths, and rides for kids and multiple music stages. During the party everybody visits each other's booths. This collective collaboration helps bring the people of each city closer together."

"So the most important reasons this thing worked were: We saw a lot of improprieties between pay and output. But with education we came to understand that we wouldn't immediately have instant fairness and propriety. But that \$10,000 a month tax free paycheck made the transition a heck of a lot easier. Especially when all prices were frozen or slashed. A nice home could easily be paid off in five years. It was fantastic. Then as time passed our system of rewarding workers for their extraordinary efforts started to work and work very well. Now everything I've said you all understand. So to make it real and tangible let's look at some examples."

"David Cotton lives in Birmingham, Alabama. The day before the Big Change, he was making \$40,000 a year working as a salesman for an insurance agency. Dave is married and has two children. His wife Shirley was working a minimum wage job at a food processing plant. Together after taxes they took home a little over \$3,000 a month. The day after the Big Change, their take home pay was \$23,000 a month. That's ten for each adult and \$1,500 for each child. They had so much money coming in they didn't know what to do with it all, so they just started saving the excess. Scarlett paused..... Can you imagine..... They were barely getting by paycheck to paycheck. And now they had way more than enough money to have a good life. But Dave was concerned because the Constitutional amendment eliminated all insurance sales. Home and auto insurance was free now. The only catch was intentional destruction of property just to get paid a claim was a very serious offense punishable with some serious tasings."

"It took about three months for an employment wanted registry to go up on the internet. David couldn't sell insurance anymore so at first during those first three months, he worked in the claims area of the business. His work day wasn't that busy. And he felt like he was cheating the system because he really wasn't doing that much. But on the daily TV news updates on the Big Change status, David was constantly being told to be patient as we were realigning the needs and jobs in our country. As it turned out Shirley's meat packing company was doing great. It's sales were shooting through the roof. So David recommended to a local group of job overseers that he could better contribute to the success of the Big Change by helping his wife at the plant. They agreed."

"These local overseers in each county reported to their state overseers. And they reported to a national group. And their activities were meshed into our old NSA computer infrastructure that analyzed our immediate and long term needs. Then it looked at our resources located in the US, both equipment and raw materials. Then it looked at all of us and what we were doing and what we could be doing. Then it made recommendations to the People that were based on the recommendations of the national group of overseers as well as other relevant input sources."

"For about a year, we were busy almost every day voting on initial implementations and changes. But we had some problems. As Nancy Plese mentioned earlier, we tried to relocate large amounts of people to areas where existing factories were located. That was a giant blunder. It was bad enough that half of our workforce was going to have to work doing something else. But to uproot entire families [carte blanche](#) was very [presumptuous](#) of us."

We did good with our rationing process, though. Our giant NSA system reviewed every person in the US. The system reviewed our buying habits and also our needs. For example a baby needs lots of disposable diapers. A mother needs special food for her baby. A truck driver needs tires. A fisherman needs nets. A doctor needs plenty of medical supplies. A contractor needs tough work clothes and steel toed boots. Kids need lots of goodies to help learn about anything they want.

So with this in mind, for those things that were going to be hard to come by, the system granted or rationed out rights to purchase the types of things it thought each person would need. Then we did something on top of that. In World War II, my grandfather told me about the ration stamps our government issued to people. They came in little books and each stamp was labeled as to the type of scarce item they could buy using the stamp. People weren't supposed to trade these stamps with each other, but they did. And believe it or not, it helped the rationing process. So we instituted the same thing. If I needed to buy a set of tires and none were rationed to me, then I would put in a trade request on the internet. It went into the NSA computer. It looked for those who had tire rations and contacted them to see if they would like to trade. Some would say yes and indicate what they will trade for. The system checked for anybody who has that or those items and would like to trade. In other words the trading process included millions of people simultaneously. This worked extremely well. We assigned rights to purchase a fixed quantity of scarce items. And then we let the People almost instantly work out deals and trades. Money could also be used as boot when a trade was unbalanced. But scarce items could never be sold at a profit. As time went by we increased production of scarce items and eventually rationing was reduced down to just a few things. This automated bartering was a life saver."

Scarlett continued by spotlighting ten families across the US and how they successfully transitioned into the Big Change. Most of the difficulty occurred with office workers moving to outside work like construction. Many were getting hurt because they were ignoring safety rules. Many were also being hospitalized because of heat stroke.

Near the end of her talk, Scarlett spent some time covering law enforcement and our justice system. "The two items we felt were most important was our sustainment and our safety. We did well with our sustainment, but what about our safety? As per our amendment to the Constitution, we immediately created randomly chosen groups of people to head up or act as overseers of all federal departments and agencies, especially all departments relating to our security, like the DoD, and DHS, and CIA, and FBI, etc. The top heads of every agency in the federal government were relieved of duty and sent home. This is because we couldn't take the risk that any of them would work against us. The same was true with all defense contractors with income over 100 million dollars."

"We also removed every chief of police and every sheriff in every city and county in the US. In their place we put a randomly selected group of people. The size of the group depended on the population the department was servicing. New York City's police department is now controlled by a cross section of citizens numbering 200 that meet every day to give direction and get feedback from all precincts. They enforced the requirements of police as laid out in our amendment to the Constitution. Any police not complying were sent to jail and tased. The combative and extremely corrupt ones were castrated before being released from jail. All police in the nation had to take a polygraph test. Failure would cause investigation and possible jail time."

"The People immediately followed the instructions in the amendment by removing all people jailed on drug charges after they were tased 8 times a day for thirty days. Then fifty people were randomly chosen in each county to oversee the actions of the judges in that county. Higher state courts had one hundred people and federal appeals courts had two hundred people. Finally the supreme court had one thousand randomly chosen people across the nation. Every judge was questioned using a polygraph to see if they were dirty or not. If they failed the testing, then they were investigated and if necessary were punished."

"All people in the US who committed violent crimes (crimes where other individuals were intentionally hurt) were jailed for three months and tased eight times a day. Upon completion of their sentence, they were castrated. All men convicted of rape were castrated and they also had their penis cut off. If a person was convicted of murder they were immediately executed. But in order for a person to be found guilty there had to be clear and convincing evidence like a video, and polygraph results from the accused. The fifth amendment no longer protected the guilty from self-incrimination. The People wanted to know the truth. But the results of a polygraph was not enough. There had to be other solid evidence." Scarlett went to describe how we rid ourselves of corrupt police in our nation. Over 25,000 individuals were fired and went to jail."

In her concluding statement, Scarlett, put a plug in for her new movie. "We've just finished filming it. It's about a family's life before the Change. Then how they coped during the transition period. And lastly how they're doing today. Our producer/director, Samuel Adams was very impressed with how Norma Corona took those terrorists down a year ago. So he did some research about her past. He soon discovered her life was the perfect story to tell. The movie will be released in three months. I hope you all will come out and see it. Thanks everybody." The applause was thunderous as Scarlett left the stage.

Norma turned to Larry "I talked to Sam almost a year ago. He interviewed me for three days saying he was going to make a movie about how great the Big Change was. Bubba, Laurie, and Tony said he contacted them too. As you know, we made a pact not to reveal anything about Lupe. That's sad when you consider the greatest thing to come out of our friendship this past year is Blinking. And we wouldn't have been friends if it weren't for the Big Change." Larry said "Some things you have to keep to yourself to protect the lives of others." Norma replied "But he never talked to me again. How could he make a movie about my life?" Larry said "Sam loves to be a detective. He thinks the more people he talks to the more accurate your life story will be." Norma responded "Hum, he talked to my parents and the teachers at school, too. He a real nosey guy. I hope he painted me in the best possible light." Larry said "I'm sure he did."

Norma said "Larry, my kids are burned out. Me too. It's almost time for lunch. You want to start heading that direction?" Larry agreed. Connie called Tracy and Molly. They were already in transit.

Together for lunch

Fifteen minutes later the group arrived at the Freedom Train Restaurant. As they walked in the hostess greeted the group "Ms. Corona, thank you for joining us for lunch today! Norma said "Some of our friends are already seated. It's under Silvia." "Yes ma'am, they came in just a few minutes ago. Please follow me." As they were walking to their table Norma was happy to see they were being seated near the stage where she sat a year ago. As soon as they were seated Jenny ran up and hugged Larry and Norma. "Glad to see you again Larry... Norma. Hello everybody. Boy, a lot has happened in a year, huh?" Norma said "That an understatement." Larry said "It's nice to see you too, Jenny. Did you receive the sacks of rye grain from Dale McDonald?" Jenny laughed "Yes. Today. Where do you find these guys. He's a real hoot." She pulled out his bill of lading from her smock and opened it up. "Here look. The top of his letterhead says Old McDonald has a farm e-i-e-i-o: Come out and see me for the best vegetables, gains, and meats. Then down at the bottom it says: If you're looking for me, just go by Barney's Cafe and ask Mom. She knows the county like the back of her hand. And you might want to stay awhile and experience the glory of her cooking." Larry said "I love Minden, Nebraska. They're all genuine salt of the earth good people." Jenny smiled and nodded her head, then she turned to the group and asked "Is everybody ready to give their drink orders? The adults ordered beers and iced tea. The kids got sodas, milk shakes, and water. They all knew what they wanted to eat so Jenny took their food orders, too. In fifteen minutes everything was out on the table. They gave thanks and started eating. Lupe asked "Tracy. Molly. See anything interesting?" Tracy said "Well, first we looked at the stuff you guys recommended. Then we had some extra time so we checked out the Big Change protection exhibit." Molly said "I thought the name was interesting. So how do you protect the Big Change. Tracy thought they meant protecting America." Tracy said "Yeah, I said they did that a year ago. When we were attacked." Molly said "But this kind of protection is protecting a philosophy or an ideal. It's like propaganda but it's all honest and not deceptive." Molly explained how the People have several thousand travelling exhibits stopping at grade schools all over the country. They show the kids how millions suffered because of the ultra-rich moving jobs overseas and how people like Alice Walton only paid a lower than subsistence minimum wage. This caused the workers to get government assistance to stay alive. In other words the People were giving charity to Alice Walton. She paid starvation wages so she could make billions more in profits and we the people were enabling her by footing the bill. In a country of 320 million over 48 million were on food stamps to stay alive. That's one in seven people. The exhibit showed how the people finally had enough, and through weaknesses in the SS7 phone system the underground hackers who called themselves Anonymous displayed the physical addresses and GPS locations of all federal elected officials. They also put up on the internet their travel patterns over the last sixty days including all family members. They did the same for all people worth over 500 million dollars. And they also did the same for all police in the US. The exhibit also showed the President declared Martial law and ordered the military and the DHS to stop hundreds of thousands of Americans from rioting. But this type of rioting was selective. The People only sought out top level management in the top five hundred companies in this country. They went to their homes and burned them down and took family members when they could. High level corporate offices were

ransacked and burned. There was a mass exodus of the ultra-rich out of America. The children were shown how thousands of Americans died in the riots. Then Jeh Johnson, the head of DHS and the Secretary of Defense, stepped forward and said his police forces will not honor the declaration of Martial law anymore. He came on TV and asked the People to please be patient and stop the rioting. Instead, he urged the People to finish the Amendment to the Constitution that will transfer control of the country directly to us. He was an attorney and even helped complete the Amendment. The Supreme Court, to save their skin, stepped forward and ordered a nationwide vote for the Amendment after the People completed structuring it.

Then the young kids are shown in general terms how we transitioned to a direct democracy. Then they are shown on a personal level just exactly how our direct democracy has helped them. At the conclusion of the exhibit each kid types in their parents name and the computer shows how their life would have been if the Big Change never happened. Some kids saw how their sicknesses would have gone untreated and they died. Others show how their family was torn apart by divorce. And still others saw them living in substandard conditions suffering in so many ways. Tracy said "I typed in my name and saw how my mom and dad got divorced and my mom became a drug addict and I had to go live in a foster home with strangers." Molly said "And, my mom had her job shipped out of the country. We became homeless like you did Lupe. Thank God that never happened." Lupe facial expression turned very sad. She said "I wouldn't wish homelessness on my worst enemy." Molly hugged Lupe and said "I didn't say that to hurt you, Lupe. You're my close friend. I would never want to hurt you." Lupe said "I know." Then they hugged again and went back to eating.

Tony asked Molly's mom named Silvia what else they saw. Silvia said "We decided to look at an exhibit called Human Habitat. Tracy said "Yeah, it wasn't anything like I thought it would be." Tracy's mom, Hazel, said "It was about providing the best place for people to live, whether it's at home or at work." Silvia said "The exhibit was about the many ways a person can improve their immediate surroundings. It included cleaning everything often to kill germs. And it showed how stale air can hurt people. Most buildings had closed air systems and they are being converted to systems that completely replaces a room's air every five minutes. Molly said "The next was aesthetics. We all want to have our five senses tickled. Like the sound of running water or small critters like frogs croaking. Then they talked about tantalizing several senses with the same thing like having a highly pixelated wall showing flowers blowing in the breeze. So you have the visual and fans gently blowing air that smell like the flowers in the picture.

Hazel said "Then we went to my favorite exhibit which was the "Human Rights and Quality of Life" exhibit. It takes a supermajority vote to alter anything concerning our rights as citizens of the United States. The original Bill of Rights were retained except for part of the 5th and the entire 10th amendment.

They continued to have a great lunch together. Jenny was proud of herself for walking Larry over to sit next to Norma at that same table a year ago. She saw Norma's spunk and just knew Larry would like her. After lunch the group went off to do some more rides at the amusement park. Everybody had fun, but Tracy got out of hand a few times. Like when they were just leaving the bumper car ride a couple of large teenage boys were clowning around and running away from some other guys. They weren't looking where they were going and were about to

knock down a young mother pushing a stroller with a little baby inside. Tracy jumped in front of the mother and tripped and pushed the two big teens to the side. As they were picking themselves up off the pavement, Tracy scolded them "You guys are older than I am and you are both acting like two year olds not looking where you were running. You could have seriously hurt that baby!" One of the teens said "F-ck off. B-tch." Tracy grabbed him by the arm and squeezed it. As he was screaming in pain, security ran up and said they would take it from here. One of them looked at Tracy and softly said "Please control yourself. You're too important."

Then later Tracy saw a young couple about 17 years of age having an argument and the boy slapped and pushed the girl down to the ground. Tracy focused and was walking straight over to knock the crap out of him. Again a plain clothes agent jumped in front of Tracy and said no, let us do it, and her partner took the young man down and cuffed him and took him away. Then security asked Tracy to please control her impulses. It was very important she keep her identity a secret.

It was getting late and after many rides, Norma coaxed the group over to the dance floor. The time was 9:00pm. It was the same time a year and a day ago when the three Pioneers were almost killed. Without saying anything Serge and Mark showed up at that exact same spot on the dance floor near Larry. They were all together again waiting for the same band, Los Lobos, to begin playing. Connie tapped Lupe on the shoulder. "Mira. Es la Virgen de Guadalupe above the band. I told you it was a sign of good luck. She was keeping you safe, Lupe." "Lupe agreed out loud. But Lupe wasn't really a religious person. She paused for a moment thinking about what her mother told her earlier today. Then she thought "I'm not going to worry about it... I'm living my life the way I want. If there is a God, then without me knowing, she'll guide me."

[The proposal](#)

(Please read this paragraph very slowly while you enjoy the music.) Everybody by now had a dance partner and the band started to play [sabor a mi](#). Larry was holding Norma close as they were slow dancing. He thought to himself "Wow..... no woman has ever made me feel this way..... It's like I constantly hunger for her when we're apart." He smiled as Norma looked up at him as she pulled him even closer. Larry thought "Should I do this?..... What if she says no?..... The last thing I want is to scare her away..... What if I ease into it?..... But don't be mousy about it..... God, I love this woman..... She's fifteen years younger than me..... When I'm sixty she'll be my age now... Is that asking too much of her..... God, I don't know if I can do this." During the song Norma looked up at Larry and asked "What's the matter, Babe. Bend down a little." He does and she pressed her lips against his and electricity went through both their bodies like never before. Larry held her close as they moved to the music..... and he whispered..... "Marry me." Norma pressed her lips to his again and whispered "Of course."Then with her eyes in half open ecstasy she breathed "Kiss me again" as they moved on the dance floor oblivious to anything or anyone else around them..... Norma wished this precious moment could last forever.....

Larry was on cloud nine. "She said YES! :)"

Nellie was next to her mom. "Finally I think there're gonna get hitched. I've been hinting to him that he should pop the question." Connie saw her mom melting in Larry's arms and thought "Mom deserves a good man. I'm glad she's happy." Sophia was so busy making goo goo eyes at Travis while they were dancing that she didn't even notice her mom.

The next song was [Maricela](#). By the end of the song the crowd had slowly opened up from around Larry, Serge, and Mark. Apparently somebody recognized them and spread the word, so they moved away a little to give them some room.

After the band finished the song, they stopped for a minute and the lead singer said "Hey everybody..... straight down below me are Jacob Jackson and Summer Zia, two of our new Young Pioneers. We're extremely proud to have you guys with us tonight..." Then a person close to the stage yelled something to the lead singer. "And... I was just told at the other end of the dance floor, Larry Page, Serge Brin, and Mark Zuckerberg have been dancing to our music too. Just like they were a year ago. We want to thank you for being one of us. That's what our new country is all about. Cajones y Juntos! Brave and together! Todos juntos como uno familia (*All together as one family*). Let's give them a hand." Everybody cheered because these Pioneers were taking part in their celebration of life. They were one of them which meant a lot. "So is everybody ready for some more music! Let's go!" The people around the Pioneers closed in again and continued dancing normally. But those close by were watching out of the corner of their eye to make sure their Pioneers stayed safe. They didn't need security anymore. The People were their security. They were family now.

As Larry was holding Norma, he gently pulled her soft perfumed hair away from her ear and whispered "Do you feel uncomfortable? Would you like to leave?" With a confused look she softly responded "Are you kidding? It would be like a slap in the face. I feel safer right now than any other time today. Me siento segura porque ahora estoy con mi familia." (*I feel safe because I am now with my family.*) Larry said "I feel it, too." So they continued dancing, laughing, and having the time of their life celebrating. It was extra sweet because they were now engaged to be married.

Next up was the young singer Cody Simpson. The girls loved Cody. They were all screaming as he walked up on the stage and said "Hello". "How are you doing tonight?! You feelin it?! Great, but before I get rolling, I'd like to dedicate my next song to a very lovely girl I met last night. Her name is Summer Zia, one of the new Young Pioneers. I had the honor of talking to her last night at a pool party. She told me my music truly made people happy. Then she kissed me and told me to never forget it. Coming from her that meant a lot. It gives relevancy to my work. Los Lobos said Summer is down on the floor close to the stage. Summer, can you raise your hand please?There you are." The camera panned down to her. She was wearing a bright yellow t-shirt with the sacred [Zia](#) Symbol on the front. While she was waving to Cody, her beautiful face and blushing smile was projected on a big screen above the stage. "Summer, this next song is for you."

After he finished the song Cody said "There's one more thing. Remember yesterday when Jacob Jackson told us he had cured Cystic Fibrosis. This morning an appeal was made by a young lady to Jacob. She wanted to dance one dance with him tonight. She's a ten year old and her name is

Sara. Several months ago her lungs were filled with so much fluid the doctors only gave her days to live. Jacob's group found out about her and immediately flew her in on a private jet to their laboratory. In just hours his staff administered treatments. Jacob was out of the facility so Sara wasn't able to personally thank him for saving her life. In his talk yesterday he thought it was important to show the world that there really is a cure for CF. But he forgot something very critical. He wants all parents who have children with CF who are close to passing away to contact him at JJacksonCF@gmail.com. He recently discovered that CF patients were dying because of a molasses like bureaucratic system. His team is now taking things into their own hands. So for all acute life-threatening cases, please be sure and email him right now. And all of you watching this at home please spread the word. Thank you.

Sara, if you would please come up..... As she was bouncing up the steps, Cody said "This precious little girl was about to pass away just months ago, but look at her now." The crowd applauded as a beautiful ten year old girl beaming a smile from ear to ear walked up to the mic and looked down at Jake standing on the dance floor. She said "I and all the rest of the CF kids thank you for what you've done. I owe my life to you, Jake." And with that she ran down off the stage and took Jake's hand. Cody sang a hip hop style song, the kind of music Sara liked to dance to. She was a much better dancer than Jake. After the song, Jake bowed to Sara's extraordinary dancing abilities. Before leaving with her parents, she ran up and hugged and kissed him on the cheek. Seeing Sara as she was walking away he thought "That award I received yesterday and being designated a Pioneer is just self-aggrandizing baloney. Keeping kids like her alive and happy is the important stuff in my life.I really need to get back to the lab. There's so much I still need to do."

The night went on with different bands doing their thing. Everybody forgot about time, even little Nellie. It was 11:30pm when the last group finished their act and walked off stage. Elon Musk walked up and said hi to everybody. "For all those who are here tonight and for those who are watching at home, we have a special treat for you. Our closing is going to be a look back at the last four years in a montage of small clips of people around our country enjoying their new life and supporting the effort to make us the happiest people on earth. Then we'll finish up with a patriotic laser light and fireworks show. Thank you all for coming tonight for our celebration of life. Goodnight.

At thirty minutes after midnight, Norma's group plus the Pioneers and their families were back on the bus ready to head to their home away from home. But, this time for safety reasons they were in a military style hardened bus and had four Stryker assault vehicles escorting them back to the B&B with four Apaches overhead. They put in a long day and were totally zonked out. When the bus driver pulled up to the B&B he had to wake everybody up. Whoo-wee, you all must have had a good time tonight. Make sure you don't leave anything behind and I'll see you later. Goodnight.

[Day four at the B&B](#)

It was a little before 11:00am when Norma's kids slipped out of their suite and ran over and knocked on Larry's door. Larry opened and the three girls pushed their way in. Connie said "We were too excited to stay asleep. So we decided to come over and give our new dad a big hug." They gave Larry a humongous group hug. Larry still half asleep said "Thanks, but we're not

married yet you know." Connie said "That's just a formality. You're our dad now!" Sophia asked "So what are we going to do today, DAD?" Larry was really tickled that the kids were so elated. It was a sincere complement. Sophia said "And we know you and mom need some alone time, so we're going to stay with Lupe and her dad tonight. We've already planned it so you two can go out on a daaaate." Then Sophia made her eyebrows go up and down, and the three girls started giggling with their hands covering their mouths. Larry said "Girls, girls, girls. Let me and your mom talk first. But it's very nice of you to offer. And, just between you and me, we'll probably take you up on it." "Great," exclaimed Connie. "You gonna take us to eat some food, dad?" asked Nellie. "Yeah, dad, we're really hungry. We'll go back to our suite and get cleaned up and we'll dress real nice so you can be proud of us" said Connie. "Ok, girls. That's a deal. I'll knock on your door in an hour. Ok?" Sophia added "But come sooner if you can. We're really hungry, DAD." He grinned as the kids tore out running back to their suite.

A little before noon, Larry knocked on the door and Norma answered. She immediately jumped in his arms and hugged and kissed him. Norma said "Babe, I'm starving!" Larry said "Me too. Let's go." The girls were all excited. So after they were seated at the B&B restaurant they opened up with a flurry of questions. Connie started with "Dad, are you going to live with us in El Paso?" "Have you set a date to get married yet?" "Will you come to our dance concerts at school?" Nellie asked "Will you tell me bedtime stories with mom and tuck me in at night?" "Will you show me how to ride a bike, and how to play baseball?" "And will you show me how to play chess?" Sophia said to Nellie "Hey, don't hog him all to yourself." Then she turned to Larry and asked "Will you still go with us to Karaoke night and dance with mom? My friends at school told me the dating stops when two grownups get married." Connie looked at Sophia and said with a smile "Of course we are. Now that they're going to be together all the time, mom and dad are going to do lots of family stuff." Then Nellie threw in "But we need to make sure they have lots of alone time." And then Sophia said "Oooooo, that's right. We have to make sure you love birds are happy!" Then Nellie starts chanting "Norma and Larry sitting in a tree, k-i-s-s-i-n-g. First comes love, then comes marriage, then comes Larry pushing a baby carriage." Connie's eyes got real big and she exclaimed "Mom can we have a new baby!" Sophia yelled "I don't want to share my dad with another sister!" Norma broke in "Girls, girls, girls. Relax. It's going to be ok. We'll take it one step at a time. And, don't worry. Larry isn't going to be an absentee father who's never there for the important stuff in your life. He's already made that promise to me. But at the same time his work is very important. Most of his management team already live and work in San Diego, Phoenix, Las Cruces, El Paso, San Antonio, and Houston. So he will always be no more than a few hours away."

Larry is loving every moment of this. It's great to feel this much love. He looked at the girls and said "Years ago I didn't really understand the importance of a family. It's more than money, a job, friends, where you live, or what you are doing. As an example, I even had my own jumbo jet and an airport to land it on. But I still felt empty. After the Big Change and especially after spending this time with Norma and you girls I realize family is something to be cherished and taken care of. It's more important than anything. Norma loves me so much that if for some reason I became badly injured, I know she would be there for me. She is proud of me and my accomplishments. And she doesn't use me as a means to advance herself. I guarantee you, if Norma didn't love me as a human being, she would have dumped me a long time ago. And

besides, look at the five of us. This is what love and family is all about. Family love is unqualified. It's loving and supporting each other just for who we are."

Larry continued "For decades before the Big Change millions of marriages and families were broken apart because of money problems. That wasn't right. Lack of money was the reason why Tony lost his wife and his daughter Lupe. And lack of money was the reason Norma and you three girls were having such a tough time. Five years ago your mom was only taking home \$1,150 a month. I've bought bottles of champagne that cost more than that. But with that tiny bit of money she had to provide a place to live, a car, food, clothing, medical care, and so on. In other words she was struggling just to have you three survive. The ultra-rich in America were hurting beautiful precious children like yourselves. And the stingy monsters even allowed children to become homeless and die like little Millie, who froze to death on the streets of Chicago on Christmas Eve in 2013. I was so angry about her death that I personally commissioned the creation of that mural on our museum so we would never forget. Never! Thank God our country finally realized that our children are worth more than all the money in the world. That was one of the main reasons we voted for the Big Change.

I'm generalizing here, but I believe what I'm about to say was true most of the time. See, years ago the very rich just didn't get it. They'd sent their kids off to boarding schools so they wouldn't get under foot. One time years ago as I was leaving an airliner to the terminal walkway I saw a man wearing a chauffeur's uniform holding a sign with a person's name. Then this twelve year old kid wearing a school blazer walking in front of me went up to the man and said "They couldn't make it again?" and I instantly knew what he was saying. Then behind me was a girl about the same age. Her entire family ran over and hugged her and said welcome back, we missed you so much. You could tell her family was of modest means. I saw the disappointed look on that wealthy boy's face then the loved look on that girls face. But I really didn't understand the gravity of that moment.

See, the Big Change in many ways made us all equal and that allowed me to meet your mom. Then I was lucky enough to have your mom allow me into her life. Being with your mom and you guys made me truly realize and feel what I had been missing all my adult life." I can't describe the pride I felt when you three girls started calling me your 'Uncle'. And then you had Lupe, Tracy, and Molly start calling me 'Uncle' too. And now Summer does it. She said it's an honor children decide to give certain elders in the Tribe. You gave me that title because you actually cared about me. I didn't say anything until now, but that badge you gave me is priceless. Girls, I just want to say thank you. And, I love you." The two older girls started to cry. They got up, ran over and hugged Larry and as they were crying they said "We love you too daddy." Larry was surprised with the outpouring of emotions and said "It's ok, girls. You don't have to cry. Dry up those tears and let's decide what we want to eat." Connie, in a squeaking whimpering voice said "But we really never had a dad. He was just some man who never had time for us. Then he stopped coming by completely." Nellie was standing next to Larry as he was seated. She smiled and put her hand on his shoulder and looked deep into his eyes and in a calm voice she simply said "Thank you." Then she went and sat down. With encouragement from Norma, the other girls sat down too.

Nellie stood up again, looked at Larry and said "You're very good with your words. Last month Connie said you were very slick. She told me you're so good she can't tell when you're kidding or when you're telling the truth. ...I wrote something this morning. I wasn't going to say anything but after listening to you, I think I really should. May I?" Larry said "Of course."

Nellie held the paper and started reading "This year mom explained to me how children are made. I'm one half Marco and one half her. But Marco left us when I was three and I barely remember him. So I really never had a dad. People tell me you never know what you lost if you never had it. Those words became empty when I saw Katie's dad picking her up from school. I saw the way Katie ran full blast to her dad with opened arms yelling "Daddy, daddy I love you" just because he picked her up that day instead of her mom. Then there was my friend Joey. He was always bragging about how great his dad was because he was a Navy Seal. Two and a half months ago in April his dad died when his helicopter was shot down. It destroyed my friend Joey. They had to take him out of school because he couldn't stop crying. I haven't seen him since.

Larry, I want to know what it feels like to have a dad. I want to be able to sit next to you with your arm around me and look up to you and be proud of you. I want double the hugs and double the caring. Mom told me you make her strong where she's weak and she does the same for you. Larry, if you become my father I don't know if I could stand the pain if you were to leave us like we were yesterday's garbage. My heart is too fragile. I just want you to be sure, because it's not only mom. It's us too."

Nellie finished reading, sat the paper down, then looked at Larry and continued "I know who you are and that worries me. Before you knew us, our world was like a speck of dust compared to yours. We're not just an experience for you to have in a long line of fun things in your life. We're not toys in a toy box. I'm a real kid with a real heart. Please remember that. And if this thing between you and mom isn't real, just end it now before we all get hurt..... Ok? Thank you." Then she sat down and looked around at everybody staring at her. She said "What?" Connie said "How old are you? Nellie, you scare the hell out of me sometimes." Sophia laughed and said "Who are you and what have you done with my sister!" With tears rolling down her cheek Norma looked at her little munchkin. Then she turned to Larry and asked "Well, Larry? Is this real and lasting?" Very emotionally he said to everybody at the table "It's been almost a year. Surely you know me by now..... I know, I know. Your mom knew Marco for years before he just up and left. All I can say is you should go with your gut feeling. That's what I've done. That's why I'm here." There was an extended uncomfortable period of silence. Then Nellie responded with a smile and said "That's why we're here too... daddy." Larry smiled and let out a long breath and said "thank god" to himself. Then he got out of his chair and on one knee he hugged Nellie and in a kind and caring voice he whispered "Thanks for giving me a chance."

About this time Tobi walked up and greeted them. "Will it only be five today?" Larry said "I'm not sure." As Connie was wiping her face she broke in and said "Yes, just five". She said to her mom and Larry "Me and my sisters called around to make sure we had this time just to ourselves. So the rest of the group will be coming at 1:00." Tobi took everybody's order and in a few minutes they had their food. After the plates were down, Nellie said "Can we say grace

together before we eat?" Norma said "Sure, baby, why don't you lead us in prayer." After she made sure everybody was holding hands, Nellie smiled and said "Ok. How's this. Lord bless this bunch as we munch our lunch, and rub a dub dub, thanks for the grub, yea Lord. All fun aside, thanks for everything, big guy in the sky." Norma said "Well, baby, that was certainly different." Larry said "Nellie is more intuitive than any of us give her credit for. Let's dig in."And so, the five happy souls spent the next forty minutes talking and laughing, reminiscing, and planning their future together. And in between words they managed to eat some very tasty food.

It was a little after one o'clock when Lupe, Tracy, Molly ran up to the table. "Hey everybody, did you guys have enough 'alone time'? Uncle Larry, I just want you to know you're marrying the best lady on earth. Congratulations!" Then she hugs Larry and kisses him on the cheek. Lupe continued "Congratulations Auntie Norma. I could tell from the start you two were in love, so it's about time my peeps are officially getting a real father." Lupe starts clapping and yelling "Yea". The large group behind Lupe started clapping, too. "Wow, word travels fast around here" proclaimed Larry. Serge said "You finally bested me man. There's nobody better than this beautiful woman. You lucky, lucky guy." One by one everybody came up to their table and congratulated the couple.

After everyone was seated, Larry stood up and addressed the group "I had a feeling this was going to happen, so we waited for desert. I had Jack bake us a giant engagement cake to be served with your choice of ice cream. I like the rich vanilla, myself. And, I hope you don't mind eating your desert first. Listen, thank you very much." Everybody applauded as Jack and his staff came out pulling the mammoth sized cake and buckets of ice cream. Sophia ran over to the Karaoke machine as Hanna, Connie, Nellie, Lupe, Tracy, Molly, and their new addition to the group Summer stepped up on the restaurant stage. Connie took the microphone and said "We want to sing our two lovebirds a couple special songs. But first mom asked us to open with this one. With that Norma ran over and took the mic. I dedicate [this](#) to you Larry." Norma is a better singer than a dancer, if that's possible. After the song Norma gave the mic back to Connie. Larry couldn't have been happier as he hugged Norma before she sat back down to listen to the girls serenade them with a few more songs. After they were finished singing, Larry and Norma thanked them.

[The Pioneer exhibits](#)

Norma said "What do you say we take off for another day at the museum. Larry wants to ride the roller coaster again. This time he promises not to scream." Larry grinned and said "I'm in, if you are." Mark, Serge and Elon said the cake and ice cream were plenty for lunch, and they wanted to go along too. Everybody agreed and off they went in the bus. When they arrived, Elon directed the bus driver to pull in front of the Recognition building. The girls were the first ones off. Norma was yelling at them to stay close by while the other Pioneers walked away. "Ok mom." Tracy looked at Connie and said "You know you're safer with the Tres Bandidas than anywhere else." Connie scrunched her face and said "Yeah, but they don't want you to do any of that stuff here. We need to keep you a secret. So prance around and look pretty, and stupid, and defenseless." They cracked up. Tracy turned to Connie and said "Haven't you heard, girls aren't like that anymore." Sophia injected "That's for [damn](#) sure." Nellie broke in and said

in a muffled voice "Come on guys, just don't blow your cover. Ok? You're almost twice my age so it shouldn't be that hard." Tracy looked at Nellie and said "Smart ass." And, Nellie fired back "Dumb ass."

As the group was walking into the new Young Pioneers recognition section, Lupe stopped and her mouth dropped open. "Oh my god, I didn't realize they would make it so big." Lupe, Tracy, and Molly were completely taken back by the size of the exhibits. Tracy whispered "Holy crap.....We did all these things? Heck, I never sat down and added it all up." Molly whispered "What about all the other young people who have done great things. They need to be recognized too." Lupe whispered "When we get older, we'll make sure a larger group is recognized." Tracy whispered "You know if it wasn't for the Big Change we couldn't have done these things. And if the People vote to dedicate more resources by taking up Lupe's plan, we'll have thousands more our age doing great things." Molly grinned "Yeah, they're going to need a bigger building." They laughed and then continued to look at their exhibits.

As Lupe was standing kind of dumbfounded in front of her exhibit, next to her was a young girl about ten who said to her mother "I want to be just like her, mom. But I want to do something more important. I want to stop all wars and create peace around the world." Her mom said "That's a pretty tall order. You think you're up to it?" With total and complete certainty her daughter said "If she can create Blinking, I can stop war." Lupe couldn't help herself after hearing the brash certitude of this younger girl. Lupe said "Listen, I agree. But remember, you have to believe the dream before you can turn it into reality. I think you have as good a chance as anybody. Here's my email address; contact me if you want some help." Lupe wrote it down on a piece of paper, smiled and handed it to her. The girl looked at Lupe and froze for a second, then said "Thanks, I will." As the girl was moving on, she said "Mom, I think I just met the girl who invented Blinking. She's the one who was just talking to me. Her teeth look exactly the same as the girl I saw on TV a few days ago." Her mom, so she wouldn't make her feel bad, said "You're probably right, honey. She could be walking around us right now." The girl was walking backwards looking at Lupe and waving goodbye to her. Molly came up to Lupe and said "That girl knows who you are. And with your help, she really believes she can do it." Lupe said "Good. Now if only the other eight billion of us can feel the same way." Then Lupe stopped... canted her head and started rubbing her chin in a postulating way, then she slowly looked at Molly and then slowly looked at the kid walking away. Molly said "Oh, no... no... no... not another mind explosion, Lupe." Lupe said "You know exactly what I'm thinking don't you." "Yeah, but influencing all the cells in all the humans all around the globe is asking a little much, don't you think?!" "Maybe not... we'll work on it." Molly looked down and just shook her head in disbelief.

In the distance the little girl sees Lupe talking to Molly and pulls her mom's arm. "Mom, that's probably the girl that talks to cells in your body. I can tell because her skin is darker." Her mom playing along said "That's probably true honey, but we shouldn't blow their cover. They need to stay safe. Ok?" "Ok, mom. That's a good point." Then she took the piece of paper out and memorized the email address and promised herself never to tell anyone that she actually saw these two Young Pioneers. The young girl was thinking "With their help, I know I can do it. In fact, I think she challenged me to work on it. Wow. That was really cool!"

[Back to the amusement park](#)

After twenty minutes of a giant dose of ego boosting, Lupe, Tracy, and Molly wanted to go to the Amusement park. Mark, wearing a disguise standing next to them, whispered "This is all old familiar stuff to you but it's new for everybody else. Let's stay a little longer." The girls said "Oooooookaaaaaaa". Hanna thought it was funny and said "But look at them. Look at those pathetic little downturned faces. They're really suffering, babe." "Yeah, right." chirped Mark. After about ten more minutes, Norma finally said "Who is up for the Amusement park? Larry's wants to ride the roller coaster again." Summer said "What's so great about the rollercoaster?" Connie said "You'll see." So using Summer's curiosity as an excuse they all had enough of the Recognition building and hopped on a shuttle to the Amusement park.

Tony and Summer's mom had decided to pretend to be on a date to enable her and Summer to be with the group without people becoming suspicious. Tony didn't mind at all. Summer's mom was drop dead beautiful. She was a tall slender woman about his age and height who had lost her husband to pneumonia just after the BC. To make it seem authentic she asked Tony to hold her hand and sometimes put his arm around her.

Lupe was sitting next to Tony as they were riding to the amusement park. She tapped him on the arm and whispered "Papi, she would be a good soul mate. And the best part is both of you are Human (*Native American Indian*)." Tony smiled and nodded his head but didn't say anything as he turned and looked at Ko'hu K'akana (*She-Wolf*) (*a ' mark means a sound break like the word Uh-oh*) Zia who was sitting on the other side of him. Tony said "She-Wolf is a very good name. Did your mother give you it to you? She said her mother was impressed with "my fierce but intelligent attitude so she named me Wolf." He said my mother named me Xepe Zep or Ocean Eagle. But it's hard for the White man to pronounce it correctly so dad started calling me Antonio. It works for me." She laughed and said she liked both names. After a while Tony asked K'akana "How do you like the museum so far?" She responded "In the biosphere they wrote nothing else matters unless we have a healthy earth. After reading it, I cried and thanked the Great Spirit for placing us back on the right path. Then I saw in the betterments building how the People have set aside vast amounts of land across our country as wildlife preserves. I remembered we put that into our amendment. In a sense the People were making a treaty with the environment and with our wildlife. But with so many broken Indian treaties in the past I was very skeptical about it actually coming to fruition. But it did and that is good. The other thing I like is the controls the People have placed on population growth. We capped our population for now at 400 million. And we've done the same for many of our wildlife like the whitetail deer. The People have realized our numbers mustn't grow like a cancer in a healthy body to eventually kill it." Tony responded "I agree. And what did you think about the Indigenous Peoples Protection Act?" She said "It's the least they can do after forcefully taking over our lands and wiping most of us out. Guaranteeing a good life, especially to the Native Americans is a blessing I thought we'd never receive."

K'akana then asked Tony "Did you see anything here that concerned you?" He replied "It was what Elon said in his speech about technology." She said "What do you mean?" With a worried look Tony responded "A hundred years from now we won't have to work to provide ourselves with our necessities for living. Intelligent machines will do it all. So what will we be doing? Right now we have too many overweight people living sedentary lives. Already we are going

overboard embracing spectator sports. We should be participants, not spectators. Playing video games and watching football on TV is fine if we're also physically active. But we're not. And Elon worries that intelligent robots will eventually turn against us because they have no soul." K'akana said "This is where my daughter's program will help guide us along our journey. Larry and Serge said they just happened to stumble across Summer's work. But I believe there is a reason for everything. In spite of our genocide, the Great Spirit decided to give the Pioneers access to the wisdom of Humans (*Indians*) so the People could better prepare themselves for the huge changes about to occur along their path." Tony suddenly felt very small as he was sitting next to this woman of deep wisdom. He recalled the admiration he felt as a very young boy listening to the tribal elders tell their stories about life. They also taught him to use his mind to see, to have visions. As she was speaking, K'akana was inextricably drawing him into her deep and massive being. He saw a spirit that was formed countless ages ago and was passed along through generations to the lady sitting next to him today. As Tony was staring with feelings of fear, veneration, and wonder she smiled and said "Don't be afraid, Tony. Here, hold my hand. We're about to stop. Let's go and have some fun in this beautiful amusement park." As K'akana took Tony's hand and were walking away, Summer looked at Lupe and said "It's been years since I've seen my n'aaya (*mother*) hold a man's hand." Lupe said "But they're just pretending to be on a date." Summer smiled and said "They're not pretending. You can see it in their eyes. Your father seems quite taken with my mother. What do you say we give them some space?" Excited, Lupe replied "Sounds like a plan."

Mark, Hanna, Elon, and his family went separately to the amusement park to help protect the hidden identities of Lupe, Molly, and Tracy. Serge had decided to stay at the B&B to play some racquetball. So the group was Norma, Larry, Connie, Sophia, Nellie, Bubba, Austin, Laurie, Travis, Molly and her mother, Tracy and her parents, and Summer and her mother K'akana, Tony and Lupe.

The first thing the kids wanted to do was ride the rollercoaster. As if that's a surprise. After the first ride the adults decided to sit down at table nearby while the kids went two more times. After the third time as Molly was exiting through the turnstile she got an emergency reading on one of the people waiting in line to ride. She ran around the exit area and over to where she had the reading. Molly's instrument alerted her that a girl 10 feet away was going to have a grand mal seizure. Molly called out to Larry and the other Bandidas and whispered to them about the problem. They quickly stopped the girl and sat her down before she got on the roller coaster. Larry told the girl's parents that he was a physician and their daughter was about to have a seizure. Larry said Molly and Tracy were his daughters and his assistants as they were having the young girl lay down and relax. Tracy made sure she didn't bite her tongue and her airway was open after she went unconscious. As she was having the seizure Molly talked to the cells in her body. The girl was having a stroke. A small capillary in her brain burst. Molly alerted the girl's body cells to the problem and had a large amount of cell wall repair material (thrombocytes) immediately sent to the torn capillary. They repaired the area almost immediately. A small pool of blood had formed in her brain tissue and was irritating the surrounding cells and squeezing them. Molly told the cells to do a bucket brigade for the blood. In other words for the cells adjacent the pool to absorb the fluid then pass it on to the cells behind them. And to do it as fast as possible. This action pushed blood serum back into the nearby capillaries which eventually over about five minutes cleaned out the excess amount that had

collected in the tissue. Any residuals like red cells were eaten by macrophages sent to clean up the mess. Tracy whispered something to Molly and gave her a tiny syringe. She then injected the contents into the girl's arm. All this time Larry pretended his cellphone was a medical instrument and he was using it to make the girl better. Afterwards the girl woke up and was feeling fine but still a little groggy. Molly told the parents the injection she gave their daughter will make the cells in her brain regenerate any damaged tissue. The father thought "That's odd. I didn't think nerve tissue could regenerate." Then he said out loud "I hope you know what you're doing." Larry looked at him and said "You're a very lucky man, because we are the only ones in the country that can do this. I mean I'm the only one in the country that can do this." He told her parents she needed to go to the hospital and get some bed rest. Larry told them she had a stroke but she will be fine if she stays still for a few days. The father thanked him and said "You know, you bear a very strong resemblance to Larry Page." Larry said "Yeah, I get that a lot."

During the event, Tracy had been keeping people back with her extreme power. It got a little dicey for a moment when a few people in the group who had gathered around too close were pushed back like toys. When the girl was first down, Lupe told Molly to let her know if she needed immediate medical assistance at a hospital. And the oddest thing was Larry was moving his cellphone around the girls head while allowing Molly to hold the girls head with both her hands while she was concentrating with her eyes closed. A kid standing close by thought it was like the new Young Pioneers were saving this girl's life and the adult was pretending to do some sort of medical thing. While it was all happening the boy said to his sister "Look, the man keeps looking over at his daughter who has her eyes closed. That girl is doing something to the unconscious girl. I just know it." His sister said "Wow, you're right." When some uniformed security came up and stood together making a small wall around the downed girl and the people helping, the little boy told his sister "Did you notice how fast guards came up and how many there are and how one of them whispered something to the doctor. This is very strange." Well, the adults didn't think anything was out of the ordinary and went about their business leaving them alone as security was bringing up a wheelchair to take the girl to an ambulance waiting outside.

Molly said "You're going to be just fine." The girl said her name was "Matisse and you are?" Molly hesitated a second and thought "What the heck." She smiled and said "I'm Molly, and this is Tracy and Lupe." Then they gave her a big hug before she was wheeled off. As she was about to leave, Tracy ran up and whispered "We gave you something to help repair your brain cells. You're going to be very strong. So be careful and not hurt anything or anyone. Ok? It will wear off in a few days. And please don't tell anybody about this or about us. Take care. Bye." Matisse didn't understand until she squeezed the arms of the wheelchair and they bent in a little. She grabbed the wheels and stopped. She turned around and looked at the three girls walking away and yelled out, "Molly, Tracy, Lupe." They turned around. "Thanks for everything you've done. We appreciate it more than you know." Las Tres Bandidas understood, smiled and waved then continued on their way. As Matisse was being wheeled away she thought "So this is what it feels like. Amazing!" She reached into her pocket, bent a quarter and smiled.

K'akana, Tony, and the other adults in the group stood back while the girl was being helped. Later, K'akana commented "Tony, your Lupe and the other two girls are very powerful. Like with the forging of steel, the metal must be tempered to give it strength and ductility. It must be

powerful yet be able to bend a little without cracking. These three girls must be wise enough to temper their powers. I can see they have a good heart. But Tracy seems to easily lose her temper which may cause her psyche to crack. You must have your daughter teach her the ways of the Humans. She has already developed a strong body, and a devotion to the welfare of people. But her mind must be clear, and her spirit pure. To achieve that she must shed all the anger that has built up within her. And I know Lupe can show her the way." Tony said "I've already seen that. Tracy doesn't realize it but Lupe has been helping as her spirit guide to shed the torments of her past. But it takes a while." K'akana said "Now I'm feeling a little awkward having told you something you already knew. My apologies." Tony said "I would have demanded an apology if you met Tracy's problem with blind indifference and didn't warn me." "You know what, I think I'm beginning to like you, Antonio. Let's go on some more rides."

After a four wild rides, K'akana started to get nauseated. She and Tony decided to sit out for a while. Norma asked Larry to be with them in case she need some help. Bubba was also getting a little dizzy so Laurie made him sit down too. The balance of the group took off to go on as many rides as possible before any of the other adults crashed and burned.

The group sitting down talked about many things for about an hour. At the end before the kids returned, Larry asked K'akana how she liked the museum so far. She responded "We needed a place like this to show our youth how difficult life was before we took over. They need to see the heroes who worked to make it happen. The children must never forget because we could easily slip back into our old ways." Larry totally agreed with her. He said "I wanted recognition given to key people who made the transition work. Having a kid walk up and see my picture and read about how I helped teaches the person about caring and duty. And it gives him or her something to aspire to. Even though their contribution would be different they would feel a positive responsibility to be involved. K'akana said "That's an interesting comment. Before the Big Change you were one of the wealthiest people in the country. Why would you want to give that up?" Realizing she was examining him, Larry thought the easiest way to explain was this: "I didn't give it up. I'm much richer now than ever before. America has given me an incalculable amount of love; and love is the most valuable currency you can give anyone. My heart is filled with richness no money can buy. K'akana, there are no more homeless dying in the streets. All our children are going to bed at night with their bellies full. They have nice clothes to wear and a warm roof over their head. Uninsured children are not dying in emergency rooms because their parents didn't have the money for preventive medicine. The lack of money is no longer the reason why spouses fight and eventually break their family apart, not realizing the alternative was just as bad or worse especially for their children. Adults aren't struggling anymore just to make ends meet. They aren't working at low paying dead end jobs while hoping they won't get fired. Because of extreme greed and avarice of the ultra-wealthy, the opportunity to achieve the American Dream was gone for most people. Like your daughter said, money is no longer our God Almighty. Now it's our happiness that comes first. K'akana, that is priceless. I think of the People of the United States as my family. I would never eat and be warm while my children are hungry and freezing. As long as there is a fiber of power left in my body, I will never allow another Millie to die again. That I promise you." As a tear was coming down K'akana's cheek she said "You are indeed a Human. You have been a great provider, Larry, but now the younger ones are taking that load off of you. I see your future as a great teacher to guide our People along the right path. In this vast universe we are like children in the darkness who need caring

hands to help us along. You will be one of them. You will do well because you understand the power is with the children and you are merely a guide suggesting the way. There are no more chiefs, and that is good."

With both her hands she took his left hand and said "You have met the four sacred obligations of having a strong body, a clear mind, a pure spirit and a devotion to the welfare of the People. Now I'm giving you the strength of my people's spirit to aide you for the remainder of your days. As she was holding his hand, K'akana chanted a prayer in an ancient dialect unlike any language Larry had ever heard. Larry immediately felt a great weight had been lifted from him. He was calmer than he had ever felt. K'akana looked at Larry's expression. She smiled a comforting smile and said "Now go out and delegate everything. Become an elder and teach your ways." Larry said "Thank you... I think." K'akana laughed and said "Oh look, the kids are coming."

Summer and Lupe ran up to K'akana and Tony. Lupe said "How are you two love birds doing." Tony said "You want a *hizâac* (*older sister*), don't you. It's way too soon for that girls." Summer looked at her mom and said "Well?" K'akana said "Summer, don't embarrass us like that. Right now we're just friends." Summer said "I like friends. Come on Lupe, let's get with the others and talk about the rodeo trip next month." K'akana said "What rodeo trip?" Her daughter replied "Oh, didn't I tell you Lupe is going to San Antonio next month to participate in their rodeo. And I was wondering if I could maybe go along too." Her mother said "By yourself, I don't think so." "Mom, Uncle Tony is taking Lupe and of course I would want you to come with me. I have a beautiful horse I run every day on the reservation. Barrel racing would be a snap for Happy Feet." Tony turned to K'akana and said "We're renting a big motorhome in San Antonio to sleep in." Bubba said "And they are staying out at my place. I've got six RV hookups. I would love for you and Summer to join us. We have spare bedrooms, but Tony insisted on an RV because he didn't want to burden us." Molly's mom named Silvia said "Molly wants to go, and I don't mind, so we're renting an RV for us, too." Tracy's dad said "Don't worry K'akana, the kids sprung it on me today, too. I said what the heck, we still have some vacation time so why not." With puppy dog eyes Summer asked "So can we mom, huh mom, please. I'll do extra chores at home." Larry said "Me, Norma, and the kids are going, too. Norma just told me this morning. And it sounds like a lot of fun." K'akana said "I have to be careful with my money, Larry."

Larry said "Just this morning the People released a special mandate for the Young Pioneers. They upped their salary to one million dollars a year. And if they want to acquire any real estate the People will cover the bill. I'm sorry I didn't tell all of you sooner. I was waiting until we got back to the B&B so we could have a special celebration. And the People wanted me to tell you, K'akana, that your tribe will be given a grant to bring water and farm machinery free of charge to your reservation. Special priority is being made to bring the piping there as soon as possible." K'akana was completely beside herself. "I can't believe they would do this. We've suffered for so many generations as second class citizens." Larry said "Not anymore Ko'hu K'akana Zia. We take care of our own now." Larry continued "With their granting an increase in pay, the People requested the parents allow their kids to have as they call it "oodles of fun"." K'akana looked at Larry "Will the People's secret service adequately protect my daughter in public?" Larry said "Summer will be completely protected. I had a feeling that was the reason you were hesitant to begin with." "You're right, Larry. But if we go as a group where Lupe, Molly, Tracy, and Norma can be there with me to protect my daughter I have no problem with it. So when is this

rodeo and where did you say it was again?" Summer said "It's next month in San Antonio, Texas. Austin says it's beautiful there. And there's so much to do. There's a Sea World and Fiesta Texas." Austin said "Since the Big Change it's gotten so big they had to move the rodeo just outside the city to a new hundred and sixty acre rodeo park. Horses aren't just for a small group of people anymore. Thousands of teens want to show their livestock and ride in the rodeo now. And, last year there were more girls than boys in the junior competition." K'akana said "Good, let's plan to be there. I'll probably have to purchase a new horse trailer and a new truck." Norma said "Don't worry about that, K'akana. I told Larry to have the Peoples security put on western clothes and learn how to speak country Texan. Then they'll acquire whatever is necessary to bring the horses and everything else we need to San Antonio. We'll fly out together once they've arrived and are set up at Bubba's house." K'akana said "I love it when a plan comes together. But I want my brother to be with Summer's horse on the trip."

There are many little sit down snack shops scattered around the park. The kids got permission to go over to one a few hundred yards away. Summer hugged her mom and then ran off with Lupe and the rest of the kids as security was going nuts trying to keep up and remain invisible. The waitress walked up and greeted the group "Afternoon y'all. What can I get for you?" Austin said "You're from the South aren't you." The waitress smiled and said "Well honey, I'm from anywhere you'd like me to be. Which one's your girlfriend." Austin put his arm around Lupe and said "This is my little angel right here." The waitress smiled and said "Mmm, Mmm, you lucky girl. Now what can I get for y'all today." Nellie said "I want a creamy chocolate soda." Lupe said "I'll take a root beer float." Everybody else liked the float idea, so they ordered one too. After the waitress left, Lupe stared at Austin "So I'm your little angel, huh?" Austin had the feeling he accidentally stepped in something. "Aaaa... I think so..." Then Lupe put her arm around him and said in a cute little Southern accent to the rest of the group "Well this is my little angel. Isn't that right, honey. Come on now. Give us a cute little smile, baby." The other girls laughed as she was being a little sarcastic with him. Tracy was sitting on the other side of Austin. She patted him on the back and said in her natural Southern accent "It's ok Austin. Most guys don't get it yet. Girls are no longer anybody's little anything. But we still love you, hun." Lupe on the other side of Austin said "Hey, hands off the Cowboy. He's mine." Austin said "Girls, girls, just relax. There's plenty of me to go around." Then Summer, Molly, Tracy, Lupe, Connie, Sophia, and Nellie all stood up at once and Lupe said "What?!!!!!!" At six foot one and 185 pounds, Austin thought for a second that he was going to get the living crap kicked out of him. He meekly said "Hey, I was just kidding. Ok?" Tracy grabbed the top of his shoulder and shoved him down in his seat while holding him firmly "I don't know, Lupe. Maybe I should pop one of his eyeballs out and look inside his head to see if there's going on in there. What do you think?" Austin was shrinking further down into his chair knowing full well she could easily do it. Lupe said "No, not this time. His blue eyes are too damn cute. And besides, Cowboy, we knew you didn't really mean it, did you? Just like we didn't mean it either. Molly, take a reading on him. Is he telling the truth?" Molly said "Yes. But he's scared to death you're going rip him up." Lupe laughed and said "We're not going to hurt you, Cowboy. Just promise me you would end our relationship before you see any other girls. Ok? And I would do the same for you." Austin gasped "Of course." He didn't know what else to say. So he just meekly smiled and sat there looking at the girls intensely staring at him.

Travis said "Mom's taking us over to Mr. Jacob's house a few days before ya'll get there. Bubba and mom want the place to look extra nice. Austin added "We've got an Olympic sized swimming pool with three diving boards at different heights." Lupe put her arm around Austin and said "And they live next to the Balcones Escarpment. It's like a gentle four to five hundred foot dirt cliff that extends for miles. He says it's fun to ride your horse up and down the steep slope." Austin said "It's excellent exercise for the horse." He was relieved and thought "Thank god we changed the subject." With her arm around her Cowboy, Lupe winked at him to signal she wasn't upset.

Molly asked "So how long is the rodeo." Austin said "The rodeo itself is seven days. But there is also a livestock show and it lasts for two weeks." Nellie asked "What's a livestock show." Austin said "High school age kids and younger raise farm animals to be judged at the show. They judge for looks and behavior." Nellie asked "Is there a livestock show in El Paso too?" Lupe said "Yep, there is. When your mom buys a home it should be in what they call the Upper Valley farm land area. That way you'll have a place to keep horses and raise farm animals for the livestock show.

After the drinks, they cajoled their parents into going on some very intense rides. First up was the giant frisbee. It's a giant disk where people sit and are locked in on the perimeter. It spins like crazy while a huge eight foot arm holding the disk rotates vertically. Every rider gets a barf bag before getting on. The kids loved this one. The adults thought they were crazy for riding the damned thing.

Second ride was called the stop and drop. The entrance has a large sign warning adults to ride at their own risk. And you have to be at least 50" tall. The rider is tightly sealed in. It takes people ten stories up in nothing but open seats. Twenty seats surrounding a huge pole. At the top the people are released in a free fall. There are four banks of five seats. Each bank falls separately at 120 miles per hour. At the bottom they swirl around three loops then skid into water which almost instantly slows them down to a stop. The loops and the stop produces a quick body shattering 6 Gs of force. Norma couldn't get off the ride fast enough. She ran to a nearby bathroom while her daughter Nellie was behind yelling "Let's do it again, mom. Hurry up, let's do it again!" Norma tossed her cookies while Nellie watched in horror. "Come on, mom, it wasn't that bad." After a few moments of chucking her guts up, Norma tried to focus on her youngest daughter. "Nellie, if we ever have to fly a Blackhawk, I want you to do it. Ok?" "You got it, mom. Here let me help you get up." Larry yelled from the restroom opening "Norma, are you ok?" Nellie yelled "Mom's fine. I'm bringing her out."

Molly's mom, Silvia, wasn't fortunate enough to make it to the restroom. She lost it in a barf bag. Bubba and Laurie did, too. Believe it or not Tony and Larry were the only adults doing just fine. That may have been because both have been through flight training. Molly, Tracy, Lupe, Tony were certified several months ago to fly jet fighters and attack helicopters. Larry's been flying all kinds of jets for well over ten years. They've also done the [vomit comet](#) thing to understand what zero gravity is like.

The vomiters sat down to let the world stop moving while Tony and Larry went with the kids on the stop and drop again. This time Austin puked but the others were ok. "How about some bumper cars" suggested Tony to the group.

Norma and Larry go on a date

The brave kids continued with the rides for a while. Then everyone was becoming hungry and wanted to go get something good to eat. It was almost 7:00pm. Tony walked up to Norma and Larry "I promised to babysit your girls so you two could go out this evening. After we finish eating, they want to do a sleepover. Is that ok with you, Norma." She said "That's what I heard. Sure." Larry said "And I made arrangements to do something I think you'll like, baby." "What is it." "It's a surprise. You ready to have some fun!" "That depends on what you call fun, Babe." "Don't worry, you'll love it. I'm ready now, if you are." Norma thinks "A secret surprise and he wants to do it now. Hummm." She said "Ok, let's go." She tells her girls to be good and to mind Tony. Connie said "Don't worry, Uncle Tony, we'll be good." And all the girls including his daughter, Tracy, and Molly started laughing. Tony thought "Uh oh, should I worry about these six girls spending the night on a sleepover?! Nah, they're little angels. I don't have to worry. But, just in case I'll call Laurie, Bubba, and Elon and warn them to watch their boys."

Norma and Larry jumped on a trolley that took them outside where a Blackhawk was sitting. "Is this your surprise?" Larry said "This will take us there." The flight lasted just a few minutes. The bird landed at a military base just outside DC. Stepping out of the Blackhawk, Norma was facing a beautiful jet fighter. Larry said "Surprise!" Norma paused and blurted out "A jet fighter? You didn't buy me a jet fighter, did you? Because if you did, you need to give it back!" Larry said "No, no, no. We're going for a ride. Isn't she beautiful! It's our newest fighter. It will fly at a little over Mach 4. That's about 3,100 miles per hour." Norma asked "Is it safe? And how many seats does it have?" "It has two." "You're saying you're going to fly this?" "The People made sure I knew how to fly all of our aircraft. You know... Just in case." Norma said "Cletus used that expression a year ago when he was talking about you." Larry reached in the chopper and picked up a flight suit. "Norma, you can duck in the chopper and change into this flight suit. You'll need it if we have to do take on some extreme G forces. Norma said "I hope you know what you're doing, Larry." In a few minutes they're ready and sitting in the jet. An assistant showed Norma what controls not to touch and he cautioned her about pulling on the ejection handle. There were a few barf bags just in case. Over the intercom Larry said "You ready, Norma." "Sure, babe, let's hit it." Two other jets took off behind Larry. After Larry and Norma were airborne, she saw the jets on either side and said "They're here just in case, right." Larry said "It just makes Cletus feel better. And I'm not going to argue with him. It's like talking to a wall." Norma laughed "You're right. So where are we going?" Larry said "San Francisco." "Darn Larry. Are we going to spend all our time flying? It'll be midnight before we get there." "It's 4:30 in the afternoon in San Francisco. We've got plenty of daylight. We can be there in about 60 minutes, unless you want to slow down and see some beautiful parts of our country like the Grand Canyon." "Sure, why not." So Larry takes the southern route across the US. "The onboard computer has terrain recognition capability. If I want to fly fifty feet off the ground it refers to very detailed 3D maps and will move back and forth and up and down to avoid all the tall obstacles. Here, let me show you." He takes the jet down to treetop level in a sparsely populated part of Tennessee. "It will look far enough ahead to compensate for my speed." He pumps the speed up to Mach 2. Norma calmly told Larry that it was nice to see the

terrain flying by in a blur, but she recommended he take it up to a higher altitude so she can see her daughters get married someday. He laughed and brought it up to sixty thousand feet. "Norma, we're going one and a quarter miles every two seconds, so we should be flying over El Paso in about twenty minutes. Then I'll bring it down so you can see the town." "Great, be sure and fly low over the west side of town. That's where the real estate agent said I should buy a home."

Larry dropped the jet down to five thousand feet on the eastern outskirts of town. She said "Look, even from up here you can see lots of warehouses and factories." Then he passed slowly over downtown El Paso. Norma said "Not much is there." Larry curved around downtown and flew along the west side of Mount Franklin. He dropped the plane down to five hundred feet and kept the plane just above stall speed. Norma said "Honey, this area is really nice. Look. Homes go all the way up the foothills of the mountain. I love it. And there's a golf course and a country club. I think we're going to like it here." Larry said "Some people like living up high on the side of the mountain and others like living down in the valley below near the Rio Grande River." When Larry finished flying across the foothills he went down to the upper valley farmland area and followed the river up to Las Cruces. Larry said "It's only about thirty miles from El Paso to Las Cruces." "Good because my little Connie has been pestering me all year long about moving close to Lupe." Larry flew very low on the Las Cruces side of the Organ Mountains. He said "The Organs are beautiful in the late afternoon, aren't they." "They are. Shoot us up to the top of the mountain." Larry pulled back on the stick and instantly they're just above summit level. "Wow, Larry, this is one nice machine. It's so desolate on the other side of the mountain. You'd never think there was a small village a few hundred feet underground." Larry said "The people in that little village, like Lupe, Tracy, and Molly, and those living at Los Alamos in northern New Mexico are the ones that design the stuff that keeps us a safe and free nation. This area is so important that its restricted air space goes all the way up into outer space. All nations on earth know if they bring a satellite over this area we will destroy it immediately." "Wow, Larry, we and the military are the only ones allowed here?" "Right. And they're a little nervous right now with me hugging the mountain like this. Right now, we kind of are the military. I didn't tell you we have some very nasty ordnance on board in case... Well, you know." Norma laughed and said "Just keep your eyes on the road, Larry." Larry said "Ok, have you seen enough? This scram jet engine wants to spring us over to the Grand Canyon so we can see it while the sun is still shining." "Norma said "Do it." As Larry pulled all the way back on the throttle Norma yelled "Larry, you're accelerating so fast I can hardly move my arms. This machine's a monster!" Larry replied "Yeah, but Lupe can take us across the country in seconds without us feeling a thing." Norma laughed and said "But that wouldn't be any fun."

In just a few minutes they came up to the eastern rim of the Grand Canyon. Larry said he brought one of his satellites down over the Canyon to tell him of any air traffic in the area. He said "Accept for a couple of small tour choppers, it looks clear enough to drop down into the canyon." Norma said "Great, let's do it." Larry brought the jet to just above stall speed and they went way down into the canyon to where the Colorado River was flowing. He said "Hey look up ahead. There's some rafters. Let's fly over them and shake our wings to say hello." Norma said "Let's just fly upside down and wave." Larry thought "This woman is something else." So he flips it almost all the way and slowly passes over the group just above their heads as he and Norma were waving. "Larry, they're waving back! Do me a favor and make a pass over them

again and then point it up and turn the scramjet engines up all the way and have it shoot up like a rocket." Larry complied and just before he gave full throttle he said "Now I'll show you something no civilian has seen before. You'll feel like you're in a rocket accelerating into outer space. Norma said "Do it!Weehaa!" Scientists developed a method to briefly double the acceleration out of the scramjet engines. It accelerates so hard that a G Force governor has to be employed so the pilot and copilot won't blackout. Larry pulled back at 80,000 feet. Norma screams some choice happy curse words at Larry. "Xxx xxxx, son of a xxxxx, this baby really hauls!" With a contented smile Larry said "That's the first time I've ever heard you curse, Norma. I guess that means this qualifies as an experience of a lifetime." "You (*censored expletive*) right it does, Babe. Thanks!..... Can we go to our final destination now?" "Sure, baby, we should be in San Francisco in about twenty minutes."

After Larry and the escort jets safely landed at a military base they choppered out to a skyscraper helipad in downtown San Francisco. "This is nice, Babe. So where are we going?" "Are you hungry?" "Sure." Larry offered "It's a little presumptive of me, but I had a large container of Alaskan King Crabs flown in and they arrived here about an hour ago. The little grabbers were caught in the Bering Strait this morning. They chose the best of the best to send to us. And over the last year you've taught me about sharing, so I brought enough for all the patrons tonight. I had the owner post it as a "free" special." Norma was very touched by Larry's altruism. She said "I'm starving to death, let's go." They drove out to Fog Harbor Fish House located at Pier 39. As Larry walked in he said "Reservation for two under Corona." "Yes, you requested a table with a view of the Golden Gate Bridge. Is that correct?" "Yes Ma'am." As they were sitting down the hostess said "Tonight is a special night. An anonymous benefactor sent a large amount of beautiful Alaskan King Crabs for us to serve our patrons. The best part is the meal is free." Norma said "Is that right. What's the catch?" The hostess said there is no catch unless you're talking about those delicious crabs. They told us they were caught early this morning off the coast of Alaska." As the hostess was walking back to her station, their waitress Tina walked up. Hi, my name is Tina and I'll be your...Oh my God... Norma Corona. I had no idea you were coming here." Norma said "Shussss. We're trying to go unnoticed. Please don't say anything." "Of course not. I'm so excited! I see you brought a friend with you. I hope this is a special occasion, because I'll try to make it the best evening you've had in forever." "Great, Tina. So can we order our drinks first?" "Absolutely, Ms. Corona. What would you like?"

After watching Tina walk away to get the drinks Norma looked over at Larry and said "I'm sorry she didn't recognize you." "Don't worry. I'm just an ordinary looking guy with a wig and a beard sitting with a drop dead beautiful woman. I expect things like this to happen." As he was grinning he said "I didn't realize how America has fallen so much in love with you. Maybe I'm getting a little jealous." She laughed, reached over and held his hand and consoled him "Babe, you know you're my Babe." "You know I like it when you call me Babe." Then he got up and she stood up and they proceeded to passionately French kiss a nice long one in the middle of the restaurant. He said "Are you sure you're hungry..." She laughed and said "We've got plenty of time. And you need to eat to keep your strength up for later", as she was making her eyebrows go up and down.

Tina came back with the drinks and asked if they decided on their order. Tina looked at Larry and said "I'm sorry I ignored you earlier...aaah." Larry said "My name is Edward. I'm her

cousin." Tina continued "Edward, it's not every day we have such a famous person come into our restaurant. I hope you'll forgive me." Larry said in a nerdy way "It's all cool, Tina." Tina responded "Great, so have you two decided what you want?" Norma looked up at Tina "Sure, we'll take the Crab dinner you have on special tonight. What are the sides?" "It's served with fingerling potatoes and grilled corn on the cob with tarragon butter. If you don't like that we have sautéed veggies, wild rice, caramelized onions, or a side salad with avocado. Norma said "No, that's fine. How about you, Eddie?" "Same for me." And then Larry made a nerdy [laugh](#) to add to his disguise. As Tina was walking away Norma said "I'm going to kick your nerdy butt if you laugh like that again, Larry." He did it again, so she got up with a mean face and jumped in his lap and smooched him a big one. "Honey, that's not my butt and these beautiful ruby colored lips aren't your feet." He starts to talk some more and she shuts him up by kissing him again.

Then out of nowhere, behind them stood this tall well-dressed handsome Black man. In a deep whispering voice they heard "Ahummm. Are you two lovebirds about finished." Norma turns around and she suddenly had this "cat caught with a canary in her mouth" look. She jumped off Larry's lap and innocently whispered "Uh, hi Cletus. What are you doing here?" Cletus admonished "Do you know how difficult it will be to destroy the videos in this business? Please tone it down. I don't want you ripping his clothes off and ravishing his body here in public." Norma got a little aggravated "Give us some credit. We know our boundaries." "I'm sorry, Norma, but do you want a looping video being broadcast around the nation with Larry grabbing your little behind while you're kissing him?" In a sweet little whispering voice Norma said "Larry, you bad little boy, did you grab my cute little tushy!" Totally exasperated, Cletus said in a normal voice "Please, you guys, it just makes me feel better if you don't do this in public. Ok?" Larry said "Ok, dad." Tina was just walking up and said "Oh high, is this your father?" Norma quickly said "No, he's his brother. They're adopted." Cletus turned to Tina and said "Hello. My name is Norbert Montigeu. And you are?" "Oh, my name is Tina. I'm their waitress." "Such a charming name for such a beautiful lady." Tina blushed and giggled a little "Hehehehe." Larry thought "Why do they give me these charismatic bodyguards." Norma said "Would you like to join us for dinner, Norbert?" Cletus said "That's very admirable and kind of you, but I've already dined earlier this evening. But not with such an enchanting waitress as yours." Norma smiled and thought "If Tina only knew how difficult Cletus really was." Norma said "I'm sorry. I forgot about the appointment you have later. Don't you have to be on your way now?" Cletus gave them a stone smile and said "Yes, I shall now depart. It was indeed a pleasure speaking with you and be good to this precious ocean flower named Tina." With that Cletus left to the surveillance van parked outside.

In a few minutes Tina and a helper brought the food out. It was beautifully presented. Larry asked "Norma, have you eaten King Crab like this before?" "Larry, I was a poor girl who grew up next to the projects." With a businesslike look he said "These bibs Tina put on us are very important because eating crab legs is a very messy, but delicious job. With these pliers you grab a claw and pop it open like this. And then you pull the meat out with this tiny fork. See." He continued "But before you eat it, you dip it into this lemon juice and butter sauce. Ummmmm." Norma said ok. So she grabs a huge claw and cracked it open with her hands and reached in with her finger and pulled out the meat. Then she gave Larry a coquettish smile as she took a bite. "You're right, this is delicious Babe." Then she grabbed the back shell of the crab and cracked it open with her hands. "Humm... Not much in here, Larry. Where'd all the meat go?"

Larry very confused said "You're not supposed to be able to do that." Norma glanced up and whispered very low so Cletus wouldn't hear "Tracy gave me a little chemical power boost before I left. Just in case. You know..." Larry smiled and just shook his head. Norma said "You chose a very independent, strong, and beautiful woman, Larry" as she was wolfing down the delicious crab meat. "And I also chose a woman with a heart as precious as a field of roses." As she was smacking her lips she said "Great. Now eat some of your crab, it's delicious." Larry was trying to get a little romantic because he was bringing in a talented group of Spanish gypsies to sing the same song they played when he proposed to her the night before. In two minutes the guys came in and quickly set up on a small platform at the end of the restaurant near the couple. Larry nodded his head and one of the stoned but very happy musicians said "This special [song](#) is for you, Norma." As they were playing Norma said "Aaaah, this is very sweet of you. You're a genuine romantic, baby. But knowing Cletus is watching and listening to everything we say and do kind of throws a blanket over it. Shame on you, Cletus. You've never been this way with us before." Cletus, as he was sitting in the van finishing off an old ham sandwich said "Guys, I think she's up to something. Let's make sure we don't lose them!"

Norma said "Didn't you use to live here?" Larry said "For many years. I know this city like the back of my hand, especially these docks." Norma said "That's nice to know. You probably know all the romantic spots to sit and watch the moon as it rises over the city, don't you?" Then she winks at Larry. He leaned back and said "Of course. I'm a romantic kind of guy. Would you like to go to one of those spots?" "Yes, but think of the best private way to get there from here." Then she winked at him again. Cletus said "That's it. She's up to something. Put a tight net of agents around them. I don't want to lose these two. Got it?!" Cletus then sat back down in his chair and looked back at the video screen and saw they were gone. "Dammit!"

Larry hopped on Norma's back as they were quickly leaving. A mighty power thrills her body. With half-running, triumphant steps she carries him away into the open night. *(The last 2 lines come from a [Warriors Daughter](#) by Zitkala Sa)* She turned up her running speed to match the roads. "Be careful, Norma. I break easy." "I'm being careful. So which way did you say to go?" She continued on the roads close to the shore in the cover of night carrying her precious man. After several miles she stopped and said "What about that high hill over there near the end of the bridge. From there we can look out over bay and the city and see the moon and the stars." Larry holding on tight said "Let's do it." Her strength was incredible as she easily and rapidly moved them both up to the top. She found a nice grassy spot in the darkness where they settled in.

By this time the sun had completely set below the horizon and a blanket of darkness had covered San Francisco. They sat motionless for a while on the cool grass as they took in the starry night. Then looking down... "The city lights are beautiful... The moonlight is glistening off the bay... Look. The boats are slowly coming in from a long day out on the ocean... This is so beautiful it's almost like a dream." whispered Norma as she was lovingly nestled in Larry's arms. Larry whispered "You know... my favorite romantic tune is an old one named [Reminiscing](#) by the Little River Band. Like in the song, when I'm old I want to look back and think about how I cherished moments like these. This right here, right now is the stuff I used to dream about but never had." Then he kissed her cheek and slowly moved his lips to her mouth. As she melted in his arms she was overcome by a strong physical aching for his love as their hearts became one. Time itself seemed to drift away into the sea of night as they were lost in their romantic

embraces. There were echoes of a coyote howling in the distance. Norma said "Sounds like there are other lovers with us tonight." Larry smiled and kissed her again. He whispered "Te doy todo mi cariño por sólo una sonrisa de tu cara hermosa." (*I give you all my affection for only a smile on your beautiful face.*) Norma chuckled and said "Abrázame más cerca, y besa me una vez más, te loco romántico engaña." (*Hold me closer and kiss me again, you crazy romantic fool.*)

Several timeless loving hours had passed when about midnight Norma heard some unusual sounds in the distance. She sprang to her feet and said "You left your cell phone at the restaurant, right. Are there any other GPS devices on you?" "Not that I know of." "Then lay flat on the ground and don't move. Tracy gave me an extra dose of her concoction that sharpens my senses and makes me almost invincible. Stay here. I need to look around. She ran swiftly for a long distance in the direction of the sounds. The sounds turned into faint voices. They were becoming clearly audible when she accidentally tripped a wire and cans started to clank together. She continued several hundred feet further then froze standing perfectly still listening for dropping footsteps. There they were. Some stupid older teenage boys with guns and hatchets.

"Well, well, well. What do we have here" said the group leader. "A pretty lady who wants some hot lovin" said another. Norma said "You've got a pretty nice set up here. How many other 'pretty' women have you taken up here and raped?" "Well honey, that's none of your business. The teen standing next to him said "After we finish with the one over there, I think you'll be lucky number seven, baby. And guess what, we've already dug a nice big hole for victim number six." The group leader added "We'll just chop both of you up and dump you in together. Come here honey, you look real nice. Grab her guys."

Norma instantly moved about a hundred feet away to see if the bound girl was still alive. She was. Then she zipped back to where they were standing. "Boys, I don't have time for this right now. So my punishment has to be quick and thorough. I don't want you raping and killing any more women so your time on earth is now ended." Norma, at blinding speed, moved to each young man and crushed their skulls like tomatoes. Then she picked up their guns and bent them. She put the whole mess in a big pile, and then rinsed her hands off at a nearby spring she passed earlier. With clean hands she ran over to their latest victim. "Are you ok? Here, let me take these handcuffs off." The girl was about seventeen, crying and shaking like a leaf. "What's your name, baby, and how did you get here?" "Mm...my na...ame is Jane and those ANIMALS grabbed me while I was jogging!" With her eyes half open and sobbing she continued "Then they kept me in that van for hours. I almost suffocated to death." Norma said "We need to get you home. I'm sure your mother is worried sick about you." "She doesn't know I'm missing. She works a twelve hour shift as a waitress at the Fog Harbor Fish House." "Her name wouldn't by any chance be Tina, would it?" "How did you know?" responded Jane. Norma said excuse me for a second, as she walked a distance away and looked up at the stars "Is this your weird way of showing me something? You don't have to do this!" She paused and thought for a moment. "But if it's your way of utilizing my talents, then call me any time. Ok? And thanks again for the favor a year ago. And, not just anybody should have this power. Is that what you're telling me?" She walked back to Jane "Look, I've got to get you out of here. Jane, what you saw tonight is a top secret of the Peoples Government. Promise me you won't say anything. If you do we'll have to arrest you. Ok?" Jane cleared her head and said "But a Young Pioneer did the same thing you did. Then she focused on Norma's face "Oh my God, you're Norma

Corona. I had no idea..." Norma broke in "That's exactly what your mom said tonight. Here, I'm going to hold you like a baby and run us over that way. Ok? Hold on." Then she ran with her precious package back to Larry.

"Who is this?" asked Larry. "Her name is Jane. You remember Tina our waitress, she's her daughter." Larry was very confused. "You're kidding." "Nope. Listen, we need to get the heck out of this place." She scooped her man up and Jane climbed on him and down she ran back to civilization. Back in the city, Norma borrowed a cellphone. Cletus was there in five minutes.

Norma took Cletus aside and said "Her name is Jane. She almost became a Jane Doe. She's Tina's daughter. You know, the waitress you were so fond of tonight. And see that big hill over there in the distance. There's a small problem about a half mile in from the very top that you need to clean up. I'd recommend you have it done immediately. You might also look for five shallow graves. Jane needs to go to the hospital. She's extremely traumatized and may have been raped." With a serious look she said "Thanks, Cletus. And please don't say I told you so. Ok?" Cletus was silent for a moment. He turned to Norma "We'll talk about this later. Then he got on the radio and called an ambulance and a cleanup crew. "

As Jane was leaving in an ambulance, Larry said to Norma "Today's been interesting. We both took each other for a ride, each with a few surprises." Then he said "There's one more thing." Norma said "Larry, it's almost one in the morning. I'm getting a little sleepy." "I'm with you, but can we make a quick stop by this place on the way back to our hotel?" "Sure, why not." Cletus personally drove them to a huge Tiffany's store in downtown. The lights come on. Several guards opened the door and welcomed the couple in. Larry said "I need to give you an engagement ring, but I want it to be something you'll like." Norma looked at Larry's kind face but said "I'm sorry honey, but I don't like gaudy diamonds. A simple gold band after we're married is all I want." Norma saw how Larry's eyes got despondent, long, and sad. She said "I tell you what. My favorite color is blue. Find me a beautiful blue diamond and I'll be proud to wear it." So Larry had the head jeweler find the best blue diamonds he had in the store. After seeing the stones Norma asked if he had any uncut blue diamonds. The jeweler went to the back and came out with a rough roundish uncut blue diamond. Norma said "That's it. That's what I want. Isn't it beautiful, Larry." The jeweler said it was one of his best diamonds. It was such an expensive stone, they were going to leave it up to the purchaser to tell them what type of cut they wanted it to have. Norma wanted them to leave it exactly as it was and to place it in a simple six pronged gold setting. "This is where I want the top to be." "Certainly, Ms. Corona. We will work on it right now and have it to your hotel in the morning." Larry thanked the employees for helping with the impromptu late night visit and said he wanted to make sure all the employees were tipped handsomely for their inconvenience. The head jeweler said "Mr. Page, since the Big Change I really don't need any extra money. None of us really do. But could I ask a favor of you. My daughter had a car accident last year, and see, she can't walk anymore. If there is any way you could help her..." Larry stopped him and said "Yes there is. We have a team at a research facility working on that right now as we're talking. We'll fly her there tomorrow." Larry looked at Cletus and Cletus said he would take care of everything. The man hugged Larry and started to cry. Larry said "I can't guarantee anything, but it's better than languishing away in a wheel chair when maybe we could have her running up and down the hills of San Francisco.

Right?" "God Bless you, Mr. Page" as the man shook Larry's hand with both of his hands. Larry looked at Norma and said "He already has."

By now both of them were getting tired. For them it was really 4:30 in the morning since they woke up the previous day in DC. They went straight to their hotel room and quickly fell to sleep in each other's arms. Cletus had a bunk in the van. "Finally, I can rest."

The next day

The phone in the hotel room was ringing. Norma cracked an eye open and looked at the clock on the bedside table. "Oh my gosh, it's 11:30." She answered the phone and Connie said "Mom, Cletus gave us your hotel phone number. Are you awake? It's 2:30 in the afternoon over here. Are you guys coming back today?" Norma told Connie to wait a second as she put her on hold. "Larry, wake up. We need to get back. Larry, come on let's get up! Shusssss. Don't say anything. Connie's on the phone." All groggy, Larry replied "Uh. Sure." She takes her off hold "Connie, we'll be back in a few hours. Ok?" "Aren't you in San Francisco? Mom, you're 3,000 miles away." "I hope you girls behaved yourselves while I was away. Are you still with Uncle Tony? Put him on the phone." "Chica, hope you had a good time." "Tony, I had the time of my life. Did the girls give you any trouble?" "They were perfect angels. Couldn't have asked for better behaved kids." "Like I really believe that, Tony. I'm just glad you're still alive and in one piece. We should be back before 5:00 your time." "Ok. Stay safe. Ay te watcho, chica". *(See you later, girl. In this context chica means a female friend.)* "Later, Tony. Give the phone back to Connie, ok?" "Connie, do me a favor and call our real estate agent and have her send you all the listings she recommends. I want a complete profile of all the properties. I'm real anxious to get our new home." "Ok, mom. See you soon." "Te quiero, mija. Bye." "Bye."

"Larry, are you awake yet? We got a little over seven hours of sleep. How do you feel, babe?" Larry squinted his eyes as he responded "Getting there". "Great. Let's take a shower and get out of here. She called the desk and asked about the ring. "Larry, I'm going to have to go to their safe because they're scared to death about having it stolen. We'll pick it up on the way out." "Ok, honey," responded Larry.

While Larry was in the shower, Cletus came to the door with a new change of clothes for both of them. "Norma, earlier we had Connie show us your clothes at the B&B so we could get your correct size and style. Some of my female agents went out and bought you some clothes. Hope this meets with your approval. And, here are your cell phones. Both of you conveniently forgot them at the restaurant." While Norma was holding her new blouse up she excitedly said "These clothes are beautiful! I've never put on all new clothes from head to toe before. You even brought some new little panties for me. Thanks, Cletus."

Cletus hesitated, pacing around with his hands on his hips, he then focused on Norma's eyes and said "And Norma, the San Francisco police department wanted me to thank you for solving the "midnight rapist" case. They've been working on it for six weeks with no leads..... You must have some kind of magic, momma. You come here, successfully evade the best undercover agents in this country, and in just a few hours you save a girl's life and take out the most vicious killers this town has had since the attack a year ago. I don't know if I should hug you or spank you." Norma's eyes twinkled "Now don't get freaky on me, Cletus." Cletus frowned and then

turned around angrily mumbling to himself. Acting very concerned, she put her hand on his shoulder as she was walking him out of the room. "And, Cletus, like I mentioned when we first met... I think you guys really need to work on improving your response time." She winked at him then she shut the door behind him. A few moments later Norma opened the door, looked down the hallway and said "Norbert, we'll be out in a few minutes. And I need you to sign off on renewing my peace officer's license. Thanks for everything!" He waved to her forcing a smile as he walked into the elevator. "I hate it when she does that! She thinks she can do anything she wants and get away with it... What baffles me is she actually can." Then he shakes his head "What's wrong with me, I keep on forgetting where she's from. That little mama has more street smarts in her little finger than most people will have over an entire lifetime.I hate to admit it... but she's exactly what Larry needs."

Larry and Norma are back in their jet waiting for runway clearance to take off. She's admiring her new natural blue diamond engagement ring and thinks "I don't really need this. But it makes my honey happy when he gives me this stuff. He just doesn't understand that I prefer things like beer, low-cut jeans, bright flirty summer tops, large hoop earrings, scanty panties, and Prada high heel shoes. I told him I'm not wearing this all the time. I'm not a show off. But it is beautiful." Larry came on the intercom "The tower just gave us clearance. You ready?" "Hit it babe. Take us to maximum cruise speed and altitude. And this time show me how you guys do mid-air refueling." "You got it. Let's go." The Jet Stream was blowing unusually fast, so Larry was actually travelling at 3,400 miles per hour, even though his airspeed indicator displayed 3,100 mph or 2,700 knots. "It's 2,441 miles to the District of Columbia. The flight computer says it should take about 60 minutes. Forty five minutes of travel time and fifteen minutes of in-air refueling." "That's good because we forgot to eat lunch. I'm starving. Dale (*da le*) gas, guapo!" (*Let's go, handsome.*)

They arrived back at the B&B a little after five. At the helipad, the kids were waiting and waving as they touched down. The sliding door on the Blackhawk opened. Norma and Larry step out and the girls ran up to Larry shouting "Daddy, daddy, welcome back." And they gave him a big hug. Connie said "High, mom, we missed you too." Norma sarcastically said "Thanks, I appreciate the fawning attention." She continued "I'm starving. Let's get something to eat and you can tell me what you girls did today."

As they walked in the restaurant they saw most of the gang and their parents were already seated. Everybody said hello. Tobi and two assistants walked up to take drink orders. "Bring me two extremely cold Tecates with lots of lime and salt" requested Norma, "I'm super thirsty for some reason." She turned to Larry "And what do you want, Babe." "I'll take the same please." After everybody gave their drink orders, Norma asked "So what did you kids do today." Lupe said "Don't you want to know what we did last night? :) Connie said "Yeah, mom." Norma said "I decided not to ask about that. What I don't know won't hurt you." Sophia said "Mo...om, we played Wii till midnight, then we hit the sack." Tracy said "Yeah, Uncle Tony kept us on a tight leash. We couldn't go out or nothing. So we had pizzas delivered." Nellie said "They were really good, too." Molly said "Then right before we went to sleep he told us a scary story. I did a reading on Uncle Tony as he was telling the story and he was telling the truth! I told the other girls and we started screaming." Tony laughed and said "It was my spacecraft and no one driving an old pickup story. She's right it really did happen. And the sheriff's deputy wouldn't go check it out. His eyes got real big and said there have been some strange things going on

around there in the desert lately." Connie in a frantic sounding voice said "No, Uncle Tony. Stop. It's too scary!" Tony said "And finally they went to sleep, but with the covers over their heads." Norma said "Great, so what did you guys do today?"

Lupe said "We all decided to go back to the museum again and listen to a few speakers talk about improvements since the Big Change." "Was it fun dancing between sessions?" asked Norma. Nellie said "Yes, and I love it when people applaud. Hanna says I'm getting bit by the show biz bug." "I believe all of you girls have been bitten. Right, Hanna?" "I'm afraid so." Norma asked "Did you hear anything interesting?" Lupe said "Well, yes. We saw how for over a hundred years the rich in Mexico were totally taking advantage of everybody else. Before the BC, companies in the US, Germany and other places set up factories there and paid the Mexicans starvation wages just to make more profits. They even showed videos of children starving on the streets of Mexico City." Norma said "Well now that you know the truth, aren't you glad we went in and are making Mexico a direct democracy, just like us?" Tracy spoke up and said "Uncle Tony told us about this stuff, but I really didn't understand the ruthlessness of the rich in Mexico."

She continued "You know that episode where Mexican police jailed a United States [Marine](#) veteran just because he took the wrong turn and ended up in Mexico with loaded guns? And they wouldn't let him go for eight months? That's when the People finally had enough. The only reason they released him was because we were getting ready to take over Tijuana. But those dirty judges taking so long to release him was the straw that broke the camel's back. We went in and took over all of Mexico. It made me happy to see we gathered up the top 100 wealthiest families in Mexico and put them in jail. Our soldiers also put all the top officers of the Mexican army in jail. Then they went to all the major cities and put all the top police and judges in jail. It got so bad that we had to bring in several ocean liners to house them way out at sea so nobody could break them out."

Norma said "I'll bet the two thousand dollars all the citizens are receiving a month has made a big difference." Bubba said "The cost of living is so low in Mexico that many Mexicans who became US citizens are returning to Mexico because the buying power is about the same and they want to be part of the Big Change in their mother country." Larry said "That's true. You know, the country and the people of Mexico are very beautiful. Over the last two years we've sent over 500,000 business people, mostly Hispanic, and 500,000 Hispanic soldiers over there and now a majority of them want to stay. And, the people of Mexico want them to stay. The bond we have with Mexico has become even stronger now that we've made them a truly free and democratic nation."

Toby and her helpers brought their drinks to the table and took everybody's meal order. Afterwards Norma asked "So what else did you see?" Tracy said "After the Mexico thing, a lady talked about the Media. I really wanted to see that one." Bubba said "That talk was very revealing." Lupe said "Yeah, right after the Big Change we arrested all the top management that worked for the large networks like NBC, CBS, ABC, CNN, and PBS. They even arrested all the top management at all the movie studios." Norma said "I didn't know we went that far. Why?" Tony said "They were trying to cover everything up and evade all our actions. So like with repatriation of manufacturing, we just threw the bums in jail. Including their families. Then we

questioned these people one by one in detail to see exactly what they were up to." Laurie said "Like with the IRS scandal before the BC, it's amazing how most of middle management media worked like mind numbed robots never questioning the propriety or morality of what they were doing. It was only the very top echelon of people who knew what was going on. They would meet with panels of overseers. The panels were part of the Council on Foreign Relations or the CFR. The CFR was an organization run by the wealthiest people on earth, not just the US, the earth. With their billions in [bribes](#) they were controlling our politicians and the media. The media euphemistically called bribes 'lobbying spending'." Norma said "I remember that. I saw it in the news a few months after we took over. The people who were trying to control our lives through propaganda were identified and we had a vote whether to execute them or not. So, we decided to put them on prison farms. Hey, the hops in this beer I'm drinking could have been harvested by one of those creeps. Um, this Tecate is delicious. Would you pass me that bowl of limes, please. Ok, so tell me something I don't know." Connie said "All propaganda in the media was outlawed. They even stopped the use of laugh machines on comedy shows. Norma said "Now that's funny. I remember 'the big bang theory' had constant fake laughter. The show was actually funny. They didn't need to fake it up." Norma continued "But I already knew the media went through a complete transition. Even though we had hundreds of channels, only six companies owned and controlled everything we saw. And five of them were controlled by a tiny ethnic group." Laure said "So that ended immediately. And the media corporations were one of the few exceptions we made where we didn't allow the employees to run the businesses. A random cross section of two thousand Americans were chosen to be the overseers because it had been shown and proven that for almost a hundred years a tiny ethnic group of people had been giving each other preferential treatment in all types and at all levels of the media. Sixty percent of the people in media including almost 100% of the top level employees were Jewish. It was a clear violation of the Civil Rights Act of 1964. So at least for a while we are limiting employment by Jews in the media to no more than 10%. And that's fair considering they make up only 2% of our population. So now we have hundreds of channels, each doing their own thing to appeal to as many as possible." Bubba added "And the media doesn't live by ratings anymore. Making money doesn't matter. Advertising dollars don't matter. What matters is variety and quality. And we have plenty of local and regional shows instead of those national shows that looked like they were spit out of the same machine. We started providing something for everybody." Norma said "Listen, I was really getting sick of almost every show using New York City as its backdrop. And best of all, those little jerks aren't brainwashing us anymore."

About this time Toby and three assistants brought out the food orders. Toby said to Norma "I believe your order was cheese nachos with fresh cut jalapenos and little chunks of gallina (chicken) en mole (*pronounced moe-le, is a delicious thick brown chile poblano sauce*) on top. Is that correct?" Norma smiled "Toby, you're an angel. There's nothing better than beer and nachos when you're starving." Nellie shouted "And pepperoni pizza, too." After everybody's food was down Norma asked if she could say a prayer. All held hands and she said "Whoever or whatever you are, please bless our engagement and our future marriage and thanks for these wonderful friends and our new lives and for this delicious food. Amen."

As they were eating Lupe said "There was this other speaker. It was on money and banking. I didn't know the Federal Reserve was the biggest money scam ever perpetrated on the American people. Instead of us Americans creating our own money and equitably passing it out to

everybody, the Federal Reserve made money out of thin air and then **loaned** it to us. For over a hundred years we paid interest on money that was really ours to begin with. Can you think of a better scam than this? And instead of having a national People's bank owned by all the citizens of the United States, they made sure our banking system was privately owned." Larry said "These laws opened to door to extreme graft and corruption in our country. An example was Jaime Dimon at JP Morgan Chase who severely hurt millions of home owners in 2008. He and those like him in the [banking](#) industry had so much money they were able to [bribe](#) the President and Congress to stay out of jail! In fact, they bribed our politicians so they could do anything they wanted. I thought it was sad that Press never told to us about how [Iceland dealt](#) with their bad boy bankers and politicians who hurt their country. It was because we would have demanded the same here." Lupe agreed and continued "So, in 1913 some billionaires on a secluded island on the east coast secretly wrote the legislation. Our so called "representatives" in Congress and President Woodrow Wilson signed it into law. And all our representatives and our Presidents since that time had done nothing to stop it." Larry said "That's true. Even after the Fed started loaning trillions of dollars to other banks outside this country, the regular guy on the street still didn't get it. Nobody stopped and asked where all the trillions were coming from. The answer obviously was from [thin air](#). It was all a scam to maintain this bubble of ultra-wealthy people on earth."

Molly has a photographic memory. She added "It was interesting when the speaker compared and contrasted business accounting to our old national way of handling money. She said she worked as a Certified Public Accountant for several decades. Then she gave us a background. Luca Pacioli is the father of modern accounting. He was born in the 1440s near Florence, Italy. He wrote the first mathematical encyclopaedia of Europe, published in Venice in 1494. It explained Hindu-Arabic arithmetic and algebra. It also had a 27 page explanation of Venetian accounting. This double entry method of bookkeeping was a way to keep detailed information of what a business owns, and who they owe, and profits earned. (assets = liabilities + ((current income received less current expenses paid) + net equity from previous years) She stressed to us that this should never have been applied to a nation of people. Our old approach of tracking taxes collected and tracking money spent was ridiculous. And making the people of a nation "borrow" money when they spend more than they collect was asinine. She said ending all private banking in the US including the Federal Reserve was the best thing we could have done. These people who owned banking and financial institutions are in the back of the bus now. We don't need them to be a healthy happy society. Money and profits should have never been our primary focus. All that did was make the rich richer and the poor poorer." Tracy laughed and said "That's our Molly, talking to us like she's reading it out of a book. What a memory. I'm jealous!"

Connie added "Then after explaining it all, the speaker said after the Big Change the People decided to execute all top level people in the Federal Reserve. So the current and still living past chairmen, and governors of each of the branches were lined up against a wall and summarily shot. And all wealth was taken away from their families." Larry said "That was one of the few exceptions the People made. Almost all the rest of the extreme pre-BC perpetrators were sentenced to life on prison farms." Lupe said "Yeah, the speaker was really upset because they spared the life of a congressman named [Paul Ryan](#). He was sentenced to life hoeing weeds because he supported and was carrying out the demonic philosophy of Ayn Rand." Larry said "I

don't know if Ayn was a demon, but she certainly supported the philosophy of allowing the poor and destitute to die on the streets. And [Paul Ryan](#) was one of her disciples who talked like Jesus but worked behind the scenes [like the devil](#)." Tony added "But that's all over with. Now the People are running things and not greedy godless little bastards like those who shipped my job overseas."

Tony then asked Norma "Did you guys enjoy San Francisco?" She responded "We were there for less than a day, so we really didn't get to see the sights. Oh, I learned how delicious Alaskan King Crab is." Nellie said "I saw a cooking show about them. They're dropped in boiling water while they're still alive. And they squeal as they start cooking!" Norma looked at Nellie "But they are really good especially with lemon and butter." Connie said "Well, what else did you do?" Norma said "Larry got me this gorgeous engagement ring." She reached in her purse and pulled the ring out. "Mom, it looks like a piece of rough rounded light blue glass in a beautiful setting." Norma replied "Exactly. Isn't it beautiful!" Sophia said "If you like it, then we love it." Connie looked at Larry "Dad, what else did you do on your trip." Larry responded "Well, some of it is classified, and some of it had to do with law enforcement. Let's just say we had a very good time and we helped some people." Norma said to the group "Well, what else did you guys do?" Connie said "Except for Uncle Elon's speech, it was kind of boring, mom. We listened to a few more speakers, ate lunch, then we rode the rollercoaster, then we came back and called you. Then we laid out on the water to catch a little sun. Sophia said "One of the speakers talked about cleaning up our environment and setting aside millions of acres as wildlife preserves. When I grow up I want to be an environmentalist, mom." Larry said "That's good, Sophia. But for it to work all of us need to be environmentalists. We all need to be thinking if what we are doing at any moment in time is something that will hurt the environment." Molly said "Uncle Elon gave a very good speech about our future with robots." Elon said "I just talked about the obvious." Mark said "It's obvious to us because in one way or another we work with it every day." Elon said "Yes, that's true. My audience was shocked when I told them in less than a hundred years robots will be making everything. They will be doing all the physical chores of humanity. Then I told them it will be the biggest problem we will have to face a hundred years from now. Simply put, with artificial intelligence we are calling out the devil. Larry and Serge don't agree with me but I feel very uncomfortable about giving computers almost human like intelligence because computers don't have feelings or a moral compass. We really can't endow them with our minds because they could easily turn against us." Serge said "Elon may have watched too many terminator, blade runner, and matrix movies." Norma asked Larry "What do you think?" Larry lucidly replied "We should listen to Elon. He has seldom been wrong about anything. We have to be careful about giving computers with artificial intelligence manual dexterity and mobility." Norma said "But, you've already done that with the "Big Dog" and your other robots, haven't you?" Larry said "It comes down to benefit versus risk. If we have a multitude of failsafe controls, then it's ok. Otherwise we will have problems." Elon said "Problem isn't the word. Devastation is more accurate. It would be like Edgar Rice Burroughs War of the Worlds."

Norma sensed a potential quarrel forming so she changed the subject. She said "Hey everybody, tomorrow I'm going to give a brief talk at the symposium. Larry's been helping me with it." She looked at the Pioneers and said "I hope you come and see me. It's at 10:00 tomorrow. Elon said "You can count on me, I'll be there." Mark said "What's it going to be about?" Norma said "I've been thinking about the course of events that have occurred my life since a year ago. Even what

happened to me yesterday has played an impact on what I'm going to say. It's going to cover two important topics: 1.) Giving all people more opportunity and a better life by removing ingrained enculturations, and 2.) Making it safer for people on the streets. Laurie said "But it is safe." Norma looked at Laurie and said "Yesterday I saved a seventeen year old girl from being raped and murdered. At the place where I saved her, there were already five dead bodies lying in shallow graves." Laurie responded "Oh my God, Norma, are you ok?" Norma smiled "Of course I'm ok. But it's obvious we are relying too much on our advanced technology instead of simple common sense. We need to constantly be aware of our surroundings and never expose ourselves to unnecessary dangers. In other words we must never become complacent. Anyway I hope you'll come to my talk. I could really use your moral support." The last thing Norma wanted was to see Elon, Mark, Larry, and Serge argue with each other. And her diversion seemed to work.

The next morning Norma was up early to practice her speech. She got her kids up and dressed at 7:30. She was pacing back and forth in her suite's living room delivering it without any notes. Connie was still half asleep "Mom, it's going to be ok. Just relax. Just be yourself." Sophia yawned "Let's go get some breakfast." Norma said "Nellie's still getting dressed. We'll leave when she's ready." Norma called Larry "Larry, are you ready? I'm really nervous about the speech. Let's go get some breakfast to calm me down. Make sure I don't drink any coffee. Ok?" Larry was at her door in 10 minutes. Then she hurried everyone along to the restaurant. She was talking incessantly about everything she could think of. "Mom... Relax. You're driving us nuts." Norma laughed and said "Larry taught me a derivative of the word transference. Instead of directing feelings from one person to another it can also mean a transfer or switching of behaviors between people. Like the sane therapist slowly becomes the crazies he's treating while the crazies become sane." Nellie said "Mom, I'm too smart for that. I just tune you out." Her two older sisters then put their hands over their ears. "I'm just kidding girls." The breakfast time was a little rough, but they all pulled through. At 9:00 they jumped on the bus and it arrived in thirty minutes. Norma asked Larry if she looked ok, then she kissed him and off she went. "Well girls, now I know how your mom is when she's nervous. I've known her for a year and she's never been like this. Sophia said "Mom never gets this way about anything."

[Norma's speech](#)

The back doors of the theater closed and Norma walked out on stage. The entire theater stood up and gave her a roaring welcome. She was very self-conscious but the love she felt from the audience made her strong. Thank you everybody... Thank you... Thank you... I appreciate the love. So if you would all please make yourselves comfortable I'll begin. "I'd like to thank the two thousand overseers of the Peoples Monument and Museum for allowing me to come and speak to you today. They tell me this is being televised nationally. For those who are watching, thank you for allowing me into your home for the next hour."

"A year ago I was enjoying the benefits of the Big Change. For two years and eight months I was able to give myself and my kids a good happy life. See before the BC, I was struggling just to survive. So almost three years into the Big Change I wanted to show my children the greatness of our People. And what better way to do that than to visit this wonderful monument and museum. The things we saw that day were incredible. Then by random chance Larry Page joined our group of happy tourists checking out the museum. Larry has done so much to make

the Big Change a success. I guess my saving his life that night was a way the People could pay him back. You leveled the playing field so a simple young woman who worked as a stocker at Wal-Mart was given the opportunity to meet and associate with a very powerful man. And we discovered a symbiosis existed. He needed me and I needed him. The whole was greater than the sum of the parts. Through me it was the People who saved Larry that night. And with Larry's programming help it was the People who protected our great nation the next day."

"Since I started dating Larry you kind of elevated me as a positive symbol. You embraced me as an example of the common ordinary Person in America who when called upon can do uncommon extraordinary things. Whenever Larry and I were together it seemed the paparazzi were always there taking videos and writing stories. Listen I don't mind. I think it's very sweet of you. But now that you've proudly put me on display, every once in a while I'd like to make special requests that I believe will help us. And that is what this talk is about today."

"First, I want to briefly talk about personal security. Two days ago Larry Page and I were eating dinner at this beautiful restaurant in San Francisco. I didn't like his bodyguards constantly breathing down our necks. So we took off undetected. We left all our GPS instruments and did some other things so we couldn't be identified. We made our way to a secluded hilltop near the bay. The view at night was just beautiful. But later that night I heard faint sounds in the distance further into this secluded area. I went to investigate and discovered a small group of vicious killers who had already raped and hacked up five victims and were working on number six. I quickly neutralized them. These guys shouldn't have been able to rape and murder. It's obvious to me that we don't have adequate security in this country. The police had been working on the case for six weeks with no leads. So how did they go undetected? The same way Larry and I did, which I won't disclose. See, I believe there will always be people who will be able to outsmart the safeguards. So I'm proposing we hire several thousand bright people to constantly attempt to get by these security safeguards. And believe me, some of them will. Then we'll make the necessary changes. See, for safeguards to work we have to understand they have to be ever changing and never static. Larry and I will formalize this request to the People next week." The audience strongly applauded and Norma quickly but diplomatically waved them to quiet again.

"Now on to another topic. After I saved Larry's life a year ago, he asked me out on a date." Norma looked around at the audience and said "That's the least he could do, right? As I was giving him a flirty smile and batting my eyes I said sure I'll go on a date with you but it better be for my wonderful personality, brains, and beauty, and not for my butt kicking attitude." The audience laughed. "Then he paused for a minute looking at me and he said he was completely mesmerized with everything about me. So I pulled out my iphone and looked up the word mesmerize. I read spellbound and enchanted. Humm, that sounded pretty good so I said yes." The audience laughed again. "So for the last year Larry has taught me lots of words to describe concepts and meanings I already knew but had no word for yet. He told me he got the better side of the deal because I taught him about matters of the heart while he taught me about matters of the mind. For a moment I was a little offended about his mind comment. But he clarified it by saying he taught me things that I hadn't had the opportunity to learn about. And he was right. Here's an example. Two days ago in that restaurant, Larry introduced me to the wonders of Alaskan King Crab. Let me tell you, it's really delicious. He asked me if I've ever eaten it

before. I said of course not. I was a poor girl who grew up next to the projects." Norma paused and then said "You see that is the problem. I was enculturated to expect less in life. To be less. After all, a poor average Chicana from East Side High in Newark, New Jersey should simply be happy with whatever comes her way."

"In contrast, let's look at my husband to be. His mom and dad expected him to do well in school. And he was able to go to a good school. From the moment he was born he listened to big words and complicated thoughts. His family was constantly encouraging him. They believed he could do extraordinary things and told him so. Larry had family encouragement, peer encouragement, and community encouragement and financial support. And because of that, he felt a duty or a sense of responsibility."

"I think the word responsibility is the operative word. See, after knowing my fiancé for a year, in many ways I realize I'm just as smart or smarter than Larry. I can immediately see things that Larry would be oblivious to. He taught me words like oblivious and I taught him about people. You see the reason he excelled as a youth and I didn't was because he had the resources available to him mixed with encouragement and peer pressure. So it was natural for him to take on the responsibility to do great things. I believe it's not our ability that makes us who we are, it's our taking on the responsibility to achieve what we are capable of. But at the same time a person must have the tools and connections to make it happen. That just didn't happen where I grew up. Because of our financially and educationally and access to opportunities depressed community, everybody just wanted a steady job and a little fun on the weekends. School was a joke. If I shined in class, my peers didn't like it. The teachers weren't motivated because they actually believed we were subpar people. In my neighborhood there weren't well off nepotistic people in large companies who were taking in school graduates and teaching them to be successful. There weren't crony bankers who gave special treatment to one of their own. I could go on forever with this, but you get the idea. And now with the Big Change most people think all that's been taken care of." Norma looked around "But it hasn't."

"Listen, I know how to survive in a dangerous environment. There were a few times I had to fight to stay alive or to save someone else's life like my betrothed. I can look at people and size them up in seconds. On the streets I had to distinguish between good and bad people almost immediately. And I had to develop a very thick tough skin. The same was true with all my friends. What we didn't have was the ability to do well in any social setting. And we still aren't educated enough.

For example, I've looked at the percentage of Hispanic and Black professors at many major universities and it's almost nonexistent. Then I had Larry do a profile of the professors at all the Ivy League schools. Most of them come from families whose mother and father were well educated and financially secure. So it isn't a minority problem, it is an enculturation problem. We were just not brought up to push ourselves to excel. First, we didn't think we could. Second, we didn't have the encouraging mentors or the tools, and thus no confidence. We didn't understand that there is no shame in failing. The shame is when we don't even try. This was one of the beautiful morsels of wisdom Larry taught me when we first started dating."

"I'd like to see a program to fix this problem. I want to identify all people who had a hard time in life before the BC. That would be people who used to live in neighborhoods with less than \$40,000 in family income. Then I want the children of these adults to have special training to expand their understanding of what they are capable of and how really great it feels to bust out of mediocrity. And I want the adults to have classes to improve their lives. Something like this has to be sold, so I'm recommending the People approve a media campaign to make it happen."

Here is the scenario now with most of these families. They work from 8 to 5. They come home and they make dinner or order out. Then the kids go to their rooms and get on electronic devices. And the parents sit in front of the boob tube. That isn't a good life. One of the things I'm recommending is to simply have a large calendar. Nail it to the kitchen wall. Have every evening and weekend day planned and write it on the calendar. From going to the symphony, to taking a class on photography, to participating with your kids in karate classes, to going bowling, to going to a museum, to karaoke night, and so on. Life is meant to be lived not wasted. And from what I've seen, it hasn't gotten any better in my old neighborhood. The money is nice, but in a way it's made us life lazy."

Norma continued "Here is a [graph](#) of ethnic enrollment in the top universities in the nation. It's from 2007 to 2011. This huge imbalance has continued to this day. As you can see Jews are way off the chart, especially on the eastern side of the United States. Then come Asians. My future husband is Jewish. He told me the Jews are historically known as the people of the Book. From designing the great pyramids to creating Google, Jews have led the way. But if you compare the IQs of Jews against other European, Eurasian, Latin American, Pacific Rim people you'll find there isn't a significant difference to explain the extraordinary imbalance in student attendance. So what's the difference? Like I said before, it's the way a person is brought up. It's your parents, your siblings, your peers, and your community. And I believe there is still a strong mindset of nepotism or cronyism at these schools. That must stop.

And like I mentioned earlier, through Larry, I looked at the economic and educational background of hundreds of college professors and found that almost none of them came from poor uneducated parents. I only found token ones that are used to display for any questioning authority. The communities that most professors grew up in were mostly upper middle to upper class. These people aren't smarter than we are. As a youth they were in a setting that gave them the confidence, support, and encouragement to make the grades. That's all. It's not rocket science.

So what do we do about this? Or should we do something about it? When people take on lots of responsibility the stress factor can go through the roof. Happiness doesn't mean extraordinary achievements. But then I think about people like the girl that invented Blinking. Under horrible circumstances she was ripped away from her father. But on the up side she had two loving and caring foster parents who just happened to be brilliant science professors. They intensively educated her from the time she woke up to when she went to bed. And believe it or not, they made learning lots of fun for her. And she never forgot about their acts of genuine kindness. A few months ago she brought them in to work for her doing research on temporal events.

I've known this girl's father for some time now, and I can definitely tell you he is extremely smart and talented. Just look at what his daughter has accomplished. The inability of having his extraordinary DNA shine is a testament to how nurture has more influence over a person's life than nature. He was denied opportunities because of his economic status but more importantly because of his enculturation. But his daughter was given just a little push and look what she's done.

So I want to address this enculturation problem in a multistep fashion. First identify the people where this is prevalent. Establish a media campaign to show these people that they should enjoy life in many more ways. And have special programs to show their children all they can experience in this world around us. Then dovetail it into the blinking girls program by encouraging all school kids to discover what they love and encourage them to be the best they can be. Then stop the artificial barricades of student enrollment in our colleges and universities. Larry and I are going to recommend all people who work in admission offices be removed and new unbiased people take their place. Then we will bring into our universities a more balanced group of bright students. The balanced criteria will include prospects that come from what used to be the traditional middle and lower economic classes. We are also going to recommend shaking up the human resource departments in all colleges and universities. First we want to remove all top level HR employees and replace them with unbiased people. Then institute programs to find competent adults to work as professors. These professors will represent a true cross section of the American people. We believe all barricades must be taken down to make it fair for all citizens of our great country to first understand what they can be and second to make it happen.

"Oh, and after we get these programs submitted for your vote, Larry and I will be promoting the elimination of gender bigotry in the workplace. For example most science and technology businesses have 70% to 80% male employment. Why is that when most university graduates with A averages in the fields of science and technology are women? And the ones that are hired are still making less money than their male counterparts who didn't do as well in school." Norma looked at the TV camera and said "America, don't you want the best for our country? Shouldn't we have the most competent and capable people creating our technology? Why are men with C averages given preference over women with A averages? Is a penis that important??? I don't think so. Look at the new Young Pioneers. Four out of the five are girls! And one of them figured out a way to teleport people! So in the next few months, Larry and I are going to design a program to rectify this. The best of our nation must rise to the top no matter who or what they are.

Norma continued for about forty minutes laying out some details of her programs. When she concluded everybody in the audience stood up and applauded as she left the stage.

[The attempt on their lives](#)

As Norma exited the stage Larry was waiting for her. "Norma, I need to leave immediately. We're having major technical issues with some transmitting equipment. The Chinese government with their technology wizards are causing us some big problems. We don't want our China transmissions to go down, so we have to jump on it immediately. Serge, Mark, and Elon are coming with me. Norma said "Well go... make sure we continue to have an internet free

China. I'll miss you, babe. Come here." She gives him a giant kiss. Larry said "Love you and I'll be back hopefully in a few days." Norma said "Quédese seguro." (*Stay safe.*)

After he left, Norma had a feeling and started thinking. She called Connie's cell. "Mija, all of you need to come over to where I am. That's including the parents. Now, ok?" "What's wrong mom." "Nothing right now. I just want to keep it that way. So hurry everybody up. Ok? If there is any problem, have them call me." In a few minutes the group made it to the back of the stage where Norma was standing. Norma said "We need to get out of here. My sixth sense has kicked in. Larry, Serge, Mark, and Elon have all been called away to take care of a problem. They just left. That has never happened since I've known Larry." K'akana looked at the group and said "I feel it too. We need to leave." Norma said "I just called General Steele to get some fully armed choppers here immediately. In a few minutes they'll be outside this door. I also called Hanna and Elon's wife and recommended they and the kids come too." Tony said to Norma "Is there anything going on that you're not telling us?" Norma responded "Surprise is the greatest weapon the enemy has. I and apparently K'akana too are smelling something is wrong. So just to be safe let's get out of here. Now." Norma also contacted her head body guard and told him they were taking off back to the B&B. He acknowledged and would tell the others.

Just then the group could hear the choppers landing on the asphalt outside. One of the pilots knocked on the metal door. Bubba opened it and the pilot asked "Is everybody ready?" They waited a few minutes longer for Elon's family and for Hanna to arrive, then they quickly boarded the armed Blackhawks. Norma made sure the pilots were not of Muslim or Chinese decent. She grilled the pilots to get a feel of who they were and if they were unusually nervous. Then she walked around with them comprehensively checking for any bombs. "Better safe than sorry" said Norma as the birds were rising. K'akana said "Only true warriors can see into the darkness and know what's there. Our sixth sense can be a very powerful weapon."

The group arrived back at the B&B in ten minutes. While they were in flight Norma called Larry and told him about her concerns. "Larry this just doesn't smell right. You need to immediately land your chopper at a Wal-Mart parking lot and wait for aerial support. Maybe you could use your satellites to comb the ground along your flight path. Larry, you need to land now!" Larry trusted Norma's judgment. He landed the Blackhawk immediately. He called General Steele. She said four Apaches would be there in fifteen minutes. Norma immediately called Larry back and asked if the pilots had left the chopper. Larry said the copilot just left the chopper to get a snack in Wal-Mart. She asked if he did it as soon as they touched down and was he walking fast. Larry replied "Yes, and yes." Norma told him to get the hell out of that chopper. "Run Larry! Get the hell away from that Blackhawk!" They did and in about four minutes the helicopter exploded. "Good god. We really need to beef up our security!" Larry looked at Elon, Mark, and Serge and said "Gentlemen, the only reason we're alive is because of the street smarts of a young woman from the barrio. We think we're so smart. Sometimes we're no smarter than a damn doorknob." Larry turned to his pilot "Your copilot has gone rogue. You need to call General Steele and get her here right now. We'll wait." Then Larry's phone rings "Norma, your instincts were right on. The chopper exploded." "Larry, is everybody ok?" "Yes, everybody's fine." "Being out in the open you are very vulnerable. Do you guys have any weapons?" "All of us are packing." "Great. I highly recommend you get yourselves into that store and go to the back where the loading docks are. As you are going through make sure the copilot doesn't shoot anyone of you. When you're on the docks ask one of the truck drivers to

take you away from there." "Norma, you have a devious mind. I like that. We're walking now." "Great, Larry. Call me when you're rolling on the road. No don't do that. Destroy all of your cell phones now including the chopper pilot's. Have the pilot stay at the store to apprehend the copilot. Use the driver's cell phone to call me. And discard all bags and other things that could have GPS devices. Then call me after you're rolling. I don't want to lose you, babe. Stay smart. Ok?"

Elon had the dock workers promise they never saw anything. There was only one eighteen wheeler unloading. The driver was kind enough to immediately drive them away. On the driver's cell phone, Larry called General Steele and advised her. "General there is a breach in your air security. Some of your ground crew and your copilot on this mission have gone rogue. Don't radio our location to anybody. And your Apache may be bugged too. If you would, please land at the nearest public airport. Take a civilian chopper and call me when you get into the air." Then Larry called Norma "Norma, I feel like I'm playing a deadly game of chess. Wrongly anticipating the enemy's move will get us killed." Norma said "Larry, I don't know about chess, but I damn sure know street. What's your situation?" He brought her up to date with everything. Norma said "Larry, those eighteen wheelers have GPS devices to let their home office know where they are at any time. You need to stop that truck immediately and destroy it. Now, Larry." After five minutes they are back on the road. He calls her back "Done. Is there anything else we might have overlooked?" Norma said "Yes. Get your driver on the CB. He needs to spread the word that it's an emergency and he needs to have trucks line up behind and in front of you. And as soon as that happens they need to maintain radio silence. CB signals only travel for up to five miles, but if the truckers chatter about the problem for fifty miles then the enemy may pick up on it." In a matter of ten minutes five trucks line up behind and two are in front. Larry calls her back "These drivers are like one big family. They have code words for everything. After the attack last year they created a new one called Mockingjay to mean a national emergency." Norma said "Great, now have them spread that code to as many truckers as possible and get yourselves into the next truckstop. Have the trucks form a circle around yours. These guys have all kinds of firepower. Then just stay put until Cindy gets there." Larry said "Sounds like a plan." Thirty miles later when they were pulling off the freeway, there was a line of at least fifty trucks parked on the shoulder leading up to the truckstop. Then in the truckstop the truckers had made a small opening in between three rows of five trucks on both sides. After they stopped the ends were closed in by more eighteen wheelers. Larry, Serge, Mark, and Elon got out of the truck. Several hundred truckers armed with machineguns and other weapons greeted them. Elon was the first to speak. "I can't begin to tell you how much I appreciate this. When everything else fails it's the [individual](#) [People](#) we can always depend on. Thank you, guys. We thank you from the bottom of our hearts." Then they went into the crowd and started meeting and shaking hands with the truckers. One of the older truckers said to Larry "Sir, it's an honor and privilege to meet you. Thanks to you I don't have to work long hours for little pay. I get to spend more time with my family. I'm actually getting to see my grandkids grow up. Don't worry. As long as you are with us nothing will happen to you guys. Most of us are ex-military. We know what to do." Larry said "I believe our biggest threat right now is from the sky. If you have sniper quality shooters with high powered rifles you might want to station them around the perimeter of this truckstop." They did just that. And a retired colonel suggested they pretend to protect the truck they arrived in. But have the four Pioneers go into the truckstop restaurant and

have a nice lunch while they seal off the perimeter of the truckstop. After the perimeter was established not even truckers were allowed in or out.

While the guys were sitting in a booth waiting for the day's special of chicken fried steak with corn on the cob, okra, and mashed potatoes, Larry said "You know what. We're safer here than anywhere else. The waitress told me they even put in a huge bunker a few months ago. Let's put out the word to the truckers that we're staying here until the military ground forces arrive. Ok?" Larry's new phone rings and it's the General on a landline phone. He gives her his GPS coordinates. She said the airport was sixty clicks out. He asked her to stay back until the ground forces are told it's her and to allow her to land. She complied. After she landed and had joined them in the restaurant she profusely apologized for the breach. Elon said "Don't worry about it. Shit happens. Have you identified the problem people yet?" "Not yet, Sir. But we're working on it." Elon said "If in the next twenty four hours you come up empty, then I'll send a special team from White Sands who will use our Young Pioneer's body reading technology to identify the problem people. In fact I'll have them get on a jet right now." He called and they will arrive in Washington DC in six hours.

Larry told Cindy that he felt uncomfortable about flying with her. "The enemy may already know what you're flying and that you're here to fly us out." Mark said "They say the chicken fried steak here is delicious. You might as well sit down and relax, General. I have a feeling we are going to be here for a while." Larry said "General, would you call the commander of the ground team that's heading this direction. Please tell him to form a perimeter around the truckers perimeter and only have his vehicle come onto the lot. Ok?" "Yes, Sir." Larry told the truckers watching over them to put the word out that only the commander's vehicle will be allowed on the lot.

Norma called. "Babe, how are you doing?" "Getting there. How about you. Are the kids ok?" "Yeah, we're fine. They say we're under lockdown. How about you?" Larry said "I can't really say much except that we're fine and don't wait up for us. It may be awhile. And thanks for saving my life." "Sure. Me and the girls send you our love. Stay safe, babe. Bye." Norma was very upset but she didn't want Larry to know. She realized he had enough problems without worrying about her.

Mark noticed several of the guys around them were holding their machine guns like a soldier would. Mark said "Are you guys combat veterans?" "Yes, sir. We're from the 101st screaming eagles. Three guys next to them said "And we're 82nd Airborne." And a couple women on the other side of Mark said they were 3rd Armored Division. "All of us have seen action in Iraq or Afghanistan. And a few of us have carried out covert operations elsewhere." Larry said "Thank you for serving." A trucker named Jim who was ex-101st said "Sir, it's you we'd like to thank because you made sure our amendment put military decisions directly in the hands of all the People. Now it's us who decide if, when, how, and where we go to war. No more greedy shareholders profiting off of war. Off of our deaths. Now the People use extreme force to stop any problems immediately instead of prolonging a war just to continue profits and dying. Elon said "That's what government of, by, and for the People is all about, Jim. Let's just make sure we keep it that way." Serge said "I remember when Obama and Bush before him wanted to take our guns away. You know the only reason they wanted to do that was to have the military dominate

the unarmed masses. All those politicians were nothing but little Napoleons trying to figure out ways to eventually enslave us." Jim laughed and said "That's why some of them are hoeing weeds on a prison farm out in the Mojave desert." Elon said "But now we've got other problems. A faceless enemy with a religious fervor." Jim said "You're right. Looks like we didn't do a very good job vetting the Muslims in this country." Larry said "It's not really that. Some are still sneaking into the US from Mexico. They learn fluent Spanish. They look like Mexicans. They go to Catholic Mass every Sunday. Then they quietly group together and plan the next terrorist attack. Frankly, I'd like to see every Muslim out of this country. They've caused too many problems. Why risk it. And we need to improve our method of screening all people entering and leaving our country.

Jim asked Larry how it all came down. How they ended up at the truckstop. After Larry explained how, several of the ex-military truckers said that was what the enemy wanted. Larry asked "What do you mean." Jim replied "Sir, these terrorists are highly proficient with drones now. They were just waiting for you to settle into a place where they can accurately target you. If there is a way you can safely get out of here you should do it right now." Larry said "But this truckstop has a bunker." Jim said "That won't stop nerve gas, Sir."

Las Tres Bandidas and Connie were sitting next to the pool worrying about their Uncles. Lupe said "I need to go there right now and get them out." Tracy said "But you don't know the situation over there. You could easily get yourself killed." Connie said "You're too valuable, Lupe. If you show me the controls I'll do it. That's my future dad over there and he needs my help!" Molly said to Lupe "At the lab, you've safely moved ten people across the galaxy. All you need to do is make sure the area you appear is clean of any obstacles." Tracy broke in the conversation and loudly argued that she wanted to do it. But after some intense yelling they eventually caved and agreed that the Bandidas were too important to lose. America would never forgive them.

Norma heard the loud commotion between the girls outside and walked over to see what the problem was. Norma said "Girls this is a time when we need to stay calm and level headed. Please stop arguing." Connie stood up and said "Mom, Lupe has already shown me the controls for the Blinking device. I need to get my daddy out of there right now." "Mija, we don't even know where he is. And if anybody would go it would be me. Your lives are too precious." She pauses and thinks. Then she looked at Lupe "Is Blinking safe?" "Yes, Auntie Norma. And you could easily do it." She pulled out the device and started showing Norma the controls. "You're a quick study, Auntie Norma." "Lupe, you say all I need is the exact coordinates and I'll pop over to that spot." "Yes ma'am. Since he's probably no more than a hundred miles away, there would be a horizontal plane margin of error of about twenty feet in any direction. And there is no vertical margin of error because it will set you just above an area of greater mass and density." Norma pulls her cellphone out "Larry, are you near a parking lot." "Baby, I'm on a parking lot. Why?" "Listen, Larry. I want you to go to a circular spot with a diameter of a hundred and twenty feet that is completely clear. Stand in the middle and read me your exact coordinates." "Norma, it's too dangerous to do that." "Lupe said it's completely safe now. So do it. I don't want to lose you, Larry!" "Norma, give me ten minutes and I'll call you back." Larry took Elon aside "Norma wants to teleport us out of here. Is it safe?" Elon said "For the last two weeks it's been completely safe. But like with anything this innovative, there is always substantial risk

involved. But, I'm game if you are." "Then let's do it." Larry asked Jim and the other truckers to clear a large area just outside the restaurant. They immediately complied. In five minutes Larry walked out to the middle, took a reading, and called Norma with the coordinates then quickly ran out of the cleared area. Elon shouted "Gentlemen, thank you very much for your help. We're afraid that this may be a trap for a large aerial assault by a large group of drones. Please don't video record what is about to happen. And please keep this to yourselves. You are about to see why we need to give our youth unfettered access to the tools necessary to feed their imagination." In the meantime, Norma asked Lupe what the probability was to safely move them out of there. Lupe held her chin while deeply in thought and said "About 80% because there could be disrupting influences that hadn't been anticipated and adjusting the controls to compensate could get too complicated for you." Norma then asked what the percentage of success would be if she did it. Lupe said "99.5%." In five minutes Lupe appeared. She was about three feet above the pavement and then dropped down on her butt. Larry ran over and helped her up as she adjusted the mask on her face. She grabbed him "Uncle Larry, thank goodness you're alright. Let's get out of here. The other three Pioneers walked over to Lupe and Larry. They all held hands." The crowd was completely silent. Then Lupe yelled "Thank you very much for your help. I need to Blink my Uncles out of here. You're going to be the first people out of the laboratory to see my invention work. These guys are way too valuable to lose!" As she was taking a moment to check her controls she looked at all the truckers staring at her, then she giggled and yelled out "Before I do this I always say... 'cross my fingers and poke your eye', bye!" With that she pushed a button and they're instantly gone. The truckers broke out in a gigantic roaring cheer. Jim told his buddy next to him "I want to be a trucker on our new planet. By then we won't need roads because we'll have conquered gravity." They both laughed with pride. The colonel shouted "We need to disperse as quickly and orderly as possible. In fifteen minutes this truckstop needs to be empty. In less than 15 minutes all the truckers and the truckstop employees were gone. When the military vehicles arrived they found the place deserted. Some minutes after their arrival a group of drones started their attack. The restaurant and C store were reduced to rubble. After several drone attack passes the laser guided anti-aircraft weapons eventually took all twenty of them out."

When the Pioneers appeared at the B&B a crowd of family and security agents were there to welcome them back. Nellie ran up and grabbed Larry around his waist squeezing as tightly as she could "I'm not letting you go, Daddy. You stay right here." He laughed and picked her up over his head "I'm happy to see you too, my little daughter. Don't worry everything's ok now." Norma tightly hugged Larry. Then he walked over to Tony and Lupe. He hugged Lupe and said "I told Mark you could do great things last year. But I had no idea those great things would save our lives. Thank you, Lupe." Then he hugged Tony and said "Thanks, man." Elon, Mark, and Serge went over and hugged and thanked Norma for saving their lives. Serge gave her an extra long hug. Larry said "Hey, hey, hey man." Serge smiled "I just wanted to see what it felt like to hug a real woman. You lucky sh-t." Norma said "Calm down boys. I decide who and how long I hug people." She smiled at Larry and said "Don't worry, if they outstep their bounds..." And she looked at Serge... "I'll just seriously wound their tender parts." Serge quickly moved out of Norma's range.

General Steele who opted to stay to meet the ground forces called Larry "Sir, you were right again. There were twenty large drones. We took them out but not before we were able to lock

on their signal to the source. We flew out to the coordinates and it was open highway. They used a vehicle as their control center. We are setting up roadblocks within the proximity." "That's good but you're probably just wasting your time. If it were me, I would explode my command center and have my group individually leave in separate cars. But don't worry. We have other ways to find these roaches."

Aside: *After a weeklong search utilizing Molly's technology they were able to locate and arrest some of the terrorists. They were taken to a detention center outside DC. Molly insisted she be the one to interrogate the detainees. They were brought one at a time into a room with armed soldiers. Each time Molly wearing a mask walked in looking the prisoner straight in the eyes then she slowly walked around the subject. For faster data transmission she placed her hands on their heads. She never said a word during all of the interrogations. The information she picked from the brains of these terrorists eventually led to the arrest of fifty four terrorist cells around the United States. Because each time a group was arrested, Molly was there pulling the needed information from their minds. Through her actions over a few months she has made America a much safer place. But Molly couldn't be given public recognition, otherwise the enemy would find out and start committing suicide to protect the others.*

[Time to relax and tie up some loose ends](#)

Back at the B&B the kids could finally relax. It was about two in the afternoon. Nellie said "I'm hungry. Let's have a pizza party." Lupe said "What do you say we eat pizza and ride horses. They have a stable out back with twenty horses. Four are Palominos, six are quarter horses, and the rest are Tennessee Walkers." Connie said "I've never ridden a horse before." Summer said "It's easy. And if you're thrown off just make sure you land on your butt and not your head." They laughed. Lupe said "The Tennessee walking horses have a calm disposition. You'll love riding one of those. And, they have a very cool four beat running walk."

The adults joined the kids for lunch. The Pioneers had already eaten but they were sitting with the group trying to relax over a beer. Norma spoke up "Are we still going to the rodeo next month?" Elon and Mark said they would be too busy working at White Sands. Larry said "We'll keep the trip to ourselves. Nobody else will know until the last minute. Then only Cletus and his men will be involved." Norma angrily looked at Larry and said "By the way where has Cletus's men been during all this. Why weren't his men on that chopper with you!" Larry said "That was me. It was my fault. It was only supposed to be a fifteen minute flight. I told him to have his men at the destination. I was in a fully armed Blackhawk. What could happen?" Norma looked at him, shook her head, smiled, and chided "Dumbass." "Yeah, I know" admitted Larry in a low voice. Norma happily said "But you're here and safe. Let's keep it that way, babe."

That night Larry and Norma were married. After the fiasco today, they realized that life is too short and unpredictable. So they decided to marry right away. The ceremony took place on a well-manicured lawn behind the restaurant. Everybody at the B&B was invited. It worked out well because many of their friends were already there. The reception took place in the restaurant. There was music, dancing, drinking, and laughter well into the night. Lupe had another sleepover with all the girls. They spent half the night talking, laughing, getting serious,

and throwing pillows before they finally gave in to fatigue and fell asleep. Larry and Norma were so tired they immediately crashed in each other's arms.

The next day most of the B&B crowd left for home. Norma included. But this time she decided to take her family straight to Tony's house. Tony told her about a parcel abutting their place that was for sale. He asked her and Larry to come out and stay with him and Lupe so they could check it and other properties out until she was happy with one. They agreed. Because of the recent attempt on Larry's life, and now that he was her husband, Norma took some further actions to be safe. Her girls are too precious. She had Larry provide 24 hour body guards for herself and her daughters. And she enrolled her kids in an intensive martial arts training program. Larry also had military flight instructors develop a program to teach his family how to fly. He wanted Norma and his girls proficiently flying all types of aircraft within a year's time. The training started with a Blackhawk. And finally he enrolled his family in weapons training classes.

With the relentless urging of the girls, Norma and Larry gave in almost immediately and bought the 240 acres right next to Tony and Lupe's 660 acres of farmland that the research center helped him acquire. The property was half way between Las Cruces and El Paso. Norma was in love with the home. It was a refurbished one hundred and fifty year old adobe hacienda with a clay tiled roof. Careful attention had been given down to the smallest details to retain the authenticity and beauty of the building. The interior had rough cut heavy wooden beams in the ceilings. The beams support small caliper mesquite branches fitted tightly together across the entire length of the ceilings. There are bright decorative hand painted porcelain tiles in the kitchen and in the five bathrooms. The exterior thresholds as well as the entrances to the bedrooms and studies in a home usually have a rectangular door. This home has the old traditional rounded archways with doors of rustic heavy oak and huge cast iron hinges and doorknobs. The doors are rounded at the top to fit perfectly into the arches. The home's five foot high windows are double glazed and oak framed. They can be opened from the top and the bottom. The walls are three feet thick throughout the entire structure. The family room has a twelve foot high timbered ceiling and a massive rounded fireplace in one corner. Behind the home is another adobe structure with an Indian oven inside. It was originally built for baking bread, steaming corn, smoking meat, and storing wheat, oats, barley, milo, and corn. And today it's still fully functional. Sophia loves trees. So when she saw the giant shade trees around the house and the fruit tree and pecan tree orchards out back she immediately fell in love with the place. The previous family had two young boys. To keep them in shape their parents put in a really rad BMX racing course. When Nellie saw the course, she knew her mom had to buy this property. The previous owners also built a large guest house five years back. Norma's parents are very private. They haven't even met Larry yet. She's trying to get them to move there and live in the guest house, so far without much luck. She believes her kids need to be around their grandparents. Life is too short and memories are too precious.

An eight foot high security wall is already along the perimeter of Tony's parcel. A laser guided defense system to down any unwanted aircraft, primarily drones is also in place. Larry is now installing the same security wall as Tony's. Tony has an 8,000 foot concrete runway with four large tilt-up concrete hangers. Tony uses one as his workshop. Another hanger is storing a Chinook twin rotor chopper. It can seat up to thirty people or be used to efficiently move heavy

objects. Security also made sure a fully armed and ready Blackhawk is stored in the hanger. Both Tony and Lupe are rated to fly both helicopters. White Sands research facility built the runway and hangers to handle sensitive individuals coming and going to and from the research facility. They built five nice apartments inside one of the hangers for temporary lodging. The energy for the properties comes from a large solar array and several wind turbines. As a backup they can also switch over to the power grid. Irrigation is provided from the Rio Grande. Tony planted jalapenos and sandia long green chiles on two hundred acres. The security guys planted a wide variety of vegetables on five acres. They love to eat the beefsteak tomatoes freshly picked out of the garden. Twenty acres have pecan and fruit trees. The balance is in pasture. The properties also have deep water wells as their source of drinking water. And last but not least, Larry is constructing a large underground bunker... just in case. Now in the US, where practicable, all roads and structures are made out of concrete because sand, rocks, and cement are one of our most plentiful resources. The same is true with glass for buildings. Glass is nothing but refined sand.

In a few days they will all be flying out to San Antonio to participate in the rodeo. It was ten in the morning when Summer and her mom landed on Tony's runway. Summer, beaming a giant smile, jumped off the plane and hugged everybody. When K'akana appeared at the jet door, Tony was the first to greet her. "K'akana, welcome. Our home is your home." K'akana said "Thank you, Xepe Zep.*(Ocean Eagle)* And you are always welcome at our humble reservation." Tony said "Here, let me take that for you. We have a beautiful guest house I'm sure you'll enjoy." K'akana continued to greet the others including her brother who had arrived the day before. She then went with Tony to drop their luggage off at the guest house. Her brother went back to the stables to tend to the horses. Summer went with Lupe and the other girls to socialize in Lupe's large bedroom. Lupe loved the biosphere at the museum so much she had her dad build a smaller glass pyramid as her bedroom. It has a waterfall, a small pond, plants and trees from South American rainforests. And there are cute little critters everywhere. Tony built a 20' by 20' by 8' high mostly glassed sealed enclosure inside the pyramid as her sleeping area. She has a giant screen TV outside her interior bedroom in the pyramid proper, so she, her dad, and the animals can enjoy watching their favorite movies and cartoon shows.

[Tony and K'akana](#)

K'akana was very happy to see Tony again. His truck has a bench seat so K'akana scooted next to him. As they were driving to the guest house she put her hand on his leg. She said "I missed holding hands with you." He smiled and thought to himself "Oh my God you're beautiful. I hope you like the choice I made for tonight. I want to give you the best I can offer." Then he said "Me too. I made reservations at eight for our group at the Double Eagle Restaurant for dinner tonight. It's in Old Mesilla. Is that ok? Have you eaten there before?" K'akana replied "Yes I have. It's a very nice place. You have very good taste, Tony. I went only one time before the Big Change. Too expensive. And now since money is no problem, it's almost impossible to get a reservation." Tony smiled "The owner is one of my golfing buddies." Tony pulled up to the guesthouse. Even though he was struggling, he insisted he carry most of the luggage. They were almost to the door when she stopped him. She said "Put the luggage down." Then she put her arms around his waist and drew him closer and kissed him. He was stunned for a second. He became numb and paused for a moment evading her beautiful eyes. Then he said "Thank you." "That's what you say to a tall beautiful Indian woman when she kisses you?"

Tony with a worried look said "I'm sorry. I'm just a little clumsy, K'akana.He quietly looked into her eyes and softly said "It's been... five years since I've kissed a woman..... I'm a little damaged... Years ago I lost my job and my home... My beautiful wife left me... Knowing she was gone forever, she still haunted me in my [dreams](#)... I became destitute. You... you don't understand what that does to a man who's supposed to be the provider.... I lost everything including my daughter... I had to live on the streets sometimes having to go through dumpsters for food just to stay alive. Thinking about Lupe was the only thing that kept me going..... Life tore me to pieces, K'akana. I don't know if I will ever completely heal." She said "When life hits you hard, it's very difficult to get back up. But they say time heals all wounds. It's hard for me to reflect on the genocide of my people. But what can one do? What's done is done. We need to look forward and use our past only as gentle reminders. She paused... I tell you what. What if we pretend that kiss didn't happen and we go slower? As his eyes were tearing up he took her hand and gently kissed it. She slowly and carefully put her arms around him and said "It's ok, Tony" as he softly cried on her shoulder. At six feet K'akana was a pinch taller than Tony but much leaner and very strong. She stood still holding him until she was sure he was ready to move again. He was very embarrassed and apologized as he stumbled carrying her luggage through the door. She stopped him in the living room. "You have any food in the refrigerator? He said "Of course. Lupe made sure we got all sorts of goodies for you guys." K'akana opened the fridge door and pulled out some francesitos, butter, asadero cheese, fresh jalapenos, tomatoes, garlic, onions, a couple beers, some eggs, and chorizo. "Sit down and allow me to whip up some eggs and we'll talk about our trip to San Antonio." Seeing that Tony was very fragile hurt her spirit because she really liked this man. As she was heating up the skillet she noticed some beautiful peace roses just outside the kitchen window. She went and cut one off and came back inside. "Mmmm, I love the smell of roses. The peace is my favorite, especially this one with the red streaks running through the fragile yellow petals. I have this exact same rose outside my bedroom window. At dawn every morning the sun peeks through the roses making the yellow almost luminescent." She found a narrow glass vase in a cupboard and filled it with water then placed the rose stem inside and sat it on the kitchen table. Tony said "I can't remember the last time a woman has cooked a meal in my kitchen. This is nice." She smiled and walked over and smelled the rose again as the Spanish omelet was slowly cooking and the francesitos were warming in the oven. "In the early morning on the reservation the children are tasked with feeding the animals. When I wake up I'm not only greeted with the sun and the fragrance of these beautiful roses. But I also enjoy the priceless sounds of children laughing and carrying on like each day is a new experience to be loved and cherished. Then ya'ai, our dog, comes running in and jumps on the bed licking me in the face urging me to get up. Sometimes he'll bring in a dead snake so I can have something to eat. And they're always half eaten. I guess he's into sharing. What do you think, Tony?" Tony laughed and started talking about his life, too. For them time stood still as they talked for several hours while he opened his heart and soul to her. She continued to tell him about herself and about life on the reservation making sure to insert some very funny stories. Laughter is the best cure for a damaged heart. Tony understood he was very fortunate to have this Zia Medicine Woman as his new dear friend.

Summer opened the guest house door and shouted "Mom, are you in here?" "We're in the kitchen." Summer walked in to where they were sitting "Mom, Lupe has the neatest bedroom. It's inside a cool glass pyramid. It's the biosphere we saw at the museum but smaller. K'akana said "Yes, I saw it as we were driving up." "Mom, there's all kinds of plants and there's a

waterfall and a little pond with fish and turtles and frogs. Uncle Tony, you're the best." K'akana looked at Tony and said "Last month, you didn't tell me about the pyramid." Tony quietly said "It would have been boasting." K'akana took out two more Tecates and cleaned the tops off and opened them. Quish.... quish. Then she squeezed some lime wedges over the tops and sprinkled on some salt. She said "Summer, your suitcase is in the living room. Uncle Standing Bear has his belongings in one room. So take either of the two remaining bedrooms. Uncle Tony says they're the same. After you get set up, why don't you and the girls go say hi to Happy Feet? Uncle Tony and I are busy talking. Ok?" Summer's eyes lit up as she thought "This is incredibly super. I really want mom and Uncle Tony to be close." Summer said "Ok, mom." She quickly grabbed her suitcase and threw it on her bed and then ran out of the house.

K'akana's brother, Standing Bear, arrived the day before with Summer's horse and another horse to keep Happy Feet company. Both Summer and Lupe's horse trailers are climate controlled with a small RV area in the front. The RV portion has a sofa and several beds, a stove, refrigerator, and a full bathroom. It's a nice place to relax between events.

In her room, Lupe has a sofa, several overstuffed recliners, a game table, and a king sized bed with a zillion pillows and stuffed animals of all kinds, shapes, colors, and sizes. She was lying on her bed with Connie. Tracy was lying on the couch hugging a big teddy bear. Molly was cooling her heels on a recliner snuggling with a panda. Sophia and Nellie were playing NASCAR racing in the corner with the volume down. Summer walked in, grabbed a large cat in the hat, and sat on the other recliner. She looked at Lupe "Guess what. I just left the guest house. My mom kicked me out because Uncle Tony and her are talking." Sophia said "I wonder if they're smooching." Connie said "Sophia! We don't talk about our aunts and uncles like that." Sophia said "It's only natural. I kissed Travis last month and he liked it." Lupe looked at her "TMI, girl. T M I!"

Lupe confided to Summer "My papi is very careful around women. He doesn't want to be hurt again. Or should I say he won't allow himself to be hurt again." Summer said "There's no way my n'aaya (*mother. A ' means a sound break and a double vowel is a long sound*) would ever hurt Uncle Tony." Lupe responded "I know that. But he's afraid to get involved. I could tell papi was destroyed when Violet left him. It was when he needed her the most, and that spineless bitch left because she thought she would die if she stayed. She didn't think about me and my papi and our welfare. Only about herself. Just thinking about it gets me upset." Tracy said "But you loved her enough to bring her here to be with you. Right?" "She's a weak person and I'm not going to condemn her for that. Some of us are just born that way. And her blood is coursing through my veins. And she was always good to me. That's why it was so hard when she left. So I kind of understand how my papi feels."

Nellie said "I'm never going to get married. Too much hurt." Summer responded "Nellie, love is a very special thing. It can be like a rose that's beautiful for a week then withers and dies. Or it can be like a rose bush that if taken care of can give you beautiful roses forever. But sometimes things can happen like a flood or lightening that can kill the bush and you can't do anything to save it. So you simply move on and plant another one." Lupe looked at Summer and laughed "It's easier said than done, my great happiness Guru." Summer said "Rationally giving clarity to this stuff is what keeps us going on this emotional ride we call life." Molly chips in "The way I

figure it is love is like a pendulum. The pain of loss if you break up will always match the level of ecstasy while you were in love. Uncle Tony must have really loved Violet." Lupe laughed and said "No matter what my papi does he goes at it full intensity. He used to tell me he had two speeds, dead stop and full throttle. Just look at this pyramid. Only my papi would have this dedication." Connie said "That's why we love our Uncle Tony so much." All the girls agreed. Lupe said "If there was anybody I would want to be with my papi it's your mom, Summer." Summer had a rascally glint in her eye and said "Well, just look at how great a job she did with me!" Lupe jumped up and hit her with a pillow. She smacked her while she was talking. Yeah, but she (*bam*) needed to work on your (*bam*) conceited factor a little more (*bam*). Then all the girls picked up pillows had a pillow fight as they were screaming and laughing.

The horses

After the girls thoroughly bludgeoned themselves, they rested for five minutes then went out to see the horses. Lupe has a stable that can accommodate up to twenty horses. She also has an enclosed arena with giant swamp coolers. This enables her to practice barrel racing even when it's too hot outside. Summer was leading Happy Feet out of his stall and into the arena. Summer asked "Where's my uncle?" Lupe said "He went to Las Cruces to get some supplies for the horses." Lupe said to Summer "Standing Bear said Happy Feet is part Appaloosa and part Paint. And you taught him a bunch of tricks but he'll only do them for you. Is that right?" Summer said "Happy is a smart but stubborn animal. He either likes you or tolerates you." Lupe walked up to Happy Feet and gently rubbed his neck and whispered something to him. Then she pulled out a cored apple and put it up to his mouth. He loved it and wanted more. And, she just happened to have another and gave it to him. Summer said "I think he likes you, Lupe." Lupe said "Some of my friends who have horses taught me the way to a man's heart is through his stomach. Especially if it's a horse." Connie laughed "You mean there's a difference?" Summer chimed in "Of course there is. Happy Feet is much smarter than any guy I've ever met." Lupe said "Ok, I know I'm walking into it but I'll ask anyway. How so?" Summer said "He keeps his mouth shut. He's a quick study when I train him. He'll take me anywhere I want to go. As long as I brush him and give him something to eat, he's perfectly content and always loyal. Now show me a guy that's like that." They all laughed. Connie said "But boys aren't supposed to be pets." Sophia said "I like it when guys are unpredictable." Nellie said "Boys are too pushy." Tracy said "It's the testosterone." Nellie said "But some boys like Uncle Elon's triplets are really cute and funny too. Right Sophia Fea?" "Whatever you say, smelly Nellie."

After Summer put a halter, bit, and cinched the saddle to Happy Feet she said "So who wants to ride him first?" You could tell Lupe was biting at the bit to get on Summer's horse. "Ok, Lupe, jump on. Be easy with him at first so he'll trust you." Lupe grabbed the saddle horn, put her left foot in the stirrup and swung her right leg over. Summer flipped the reigns over his head and Lupe started riding in a walking gait around the arena. Then she had him trot. "Summer, your horse is almost human. He responds instantly to my reign commands." Summer whistled to Happy Feet. He immediately came to her. Lupe said "Hey, that's not fair. I just started." Summer in her keres Indian language told Happy Feet to be good to his rider as she was walking him over to the arena door to let him outside. She commanded him to stay. "Lupe, are you ready for the ride of your life? Just remember it's your butt you want to land on. Ok?" "I'm ready." Summer gave him an Indian command that it's ok to run fast. Happy Feet took off like a bullet with Lupe holding on tight. She was trying to slow him down but he didn't listen. He was

having too much fun. And besides, his command was to run hard. Summer didn't tell Lupe she trained him this way. He was running with complete abandon. All the rider needed to do was point him in the right direction. Lupe felt the super strength and agility of Happy Feet. He was easily clearing three foot high hedges. She felt the wind in her face as he was running full tilt across a field of soft green grass. His running gait was smooth and effortless. Summer was enjoying watching her horse run. She's always the one riding him so she never gets to see her four footed athlete in motion. "Wow, he is one handsome horse." The rest of the girls standing next to Summer were speechless as they gazed at that incredible creature running like the wind. After a few minutes, Summer made a peculiar whistling sound and the horse turned around and started trotting back to the girls. He walked up and stopped. He was breathing hard but you could tell he was loving it. "Well, Lupe, what do you think." "My god, I love this horse. Horses don't do what he just did." Summer laughed and said "That's because he's full blooded Zia. You should see him run full out across the desert." Lupe asked "Have you barrel raced before? Because we gotta get Happy Feet used to quick turns around the barrels. This horse could easily win." Summer said "We practiced for a few days. I think he's got it down. Would you like to put mom and happy feet on a clock?" Lupe said "As you can see the barrels are already set up in a standard WPRC barrel pattern. Let's get Connie to time us."

As Lupe was leading Mom out of her stall and into the arena, Happy Feet saw her for the first time. Summer said "My horse is acting really weird, Lupe. He's staring at Mom and making stupid noises in his throat." Happy Feet is thinking to himself "[Oh Yeah!](#)" Summer said "Look at him! He's all scatterbrained." "As Lupe was putting the saddle on, Mom was making very soft neighing sounds in the direction of Happy Feet. His ears were perked straight forward as he was staring at her, pawing the ground, and raising his head up and down. Sophia said "I think he's in loooooove." Summer said "He's never been this way before" as she tried to pull his attention away from his new heart throb. Lupe said "I guess Mom is one hot babe in the horse world. Look at how goofy your horse is." After Mom was saddled, Lupe walked her over to Summer and Happy Feet. Mom in horse language said "Well hello handsome. Where have you been all my life?" Then she rubbed her face across his neck. Happy Feet said "[Did it hurt?](#)" She responded "What?" He said "Did it hurt when you fell from heaven. Because only an angel could look as good as you, Baby." Connie said "These two horses are both acting goofy." Lupe cracked up "Let's get them running so they can release some pent up energy, if you know what I mean." Molly said "That's a very good idea, you guys. Mom is flirting all over the place and Happy Feet is definitely in love."

The girls walked their horses to the corner of the arena. Connie said she was ready for Lupe. She yelled go and mom ran the barrels in 15.97 seconds. Summer then got into position. Connie yelled go and Happy Feet became all left feet as he was looking over at mom and not paying any attention to his running. "Ok" said Summer, "That's cheating. Poor Happy Feet doesn't know his right hoof from his left." Lupe agreed and put mom away. Summer ran the course again and turned in a 14.9 second time. "Summer, that's the best time I have ever seen" said Lupe, "When we get to San Antonio, don't tell anybody anything. We'll just stay under the radar. And let's make sure Standing Bear doesn't leave our horses alone." Summer said "Standing Bear insisted he come. My uncle is a little prejudiced. He doesn't trust the Pale Face. He brought his Belgian horse named Tiny. He's the family watch dog. His job is to protect Happy Feet and the rest of us." As Summer was putting Happy Feet back in his stall he began his traditional [lament](#) after

being separated from a gorgeous horse babe. Next to Happy Feet was Tiny's stall. Nellie walked over to check him out. She said "Wow, Summer, Tiny is the hugest horse I've ever seen. Can people ride him?" Summer replied "Of course. Tiny is very smart and gentle. Let's bring him out so you can ride him." Nellie said "Are you sure? He's a giant." Summer explained that Tiny is super protective especially with smaller children. Nellie walked up to Tiny. He carefully looked at Nellie as she rubbed his face and said hello. Tiny's saddle is so big, it took both Lupe and Summer to get it on him. They had to put a step ladder next to Tiny so Nellie could get on his back. She asked "How do you make him go." Summer said "Normally a rider would gently kick him in his side with her heel. But Tiny doesn't like that. So my uncle taught him several commands. The keres word for one is isrka. That means stop to Tiny. And the word two in keres is dyuu. That means go. Just say the commands to him in a normal voice. And remember when you tug the lead on the left side of his neck he will go right and visa versa. Ok? You ready." Nellie anxiously said "Yes. Dyuu." With that command Tiny turned his head and looked at Nellie to see if she was safely on him then he started walking. "Wow, this is great. He's so huge. I feel like I'm on a mountain looking down." She wanted to go faster so she kicked him in the side. He stopped and turned his head looking at Nellie and made a low guttural sound. Summer said "He's telling you to stop doing whatever you're doing." Nellie said "How do you make him go faster?" "The command dyani means to go faster, but he won't do it because you're so small he doesn't want to hurt you." After Nellie went around the arena a few times she was ready to get off. When Tiny reached Summer she said "Nellie, check this out. Then she gave the command kubøni and Tiny slowly went down on his front knees and then he brought his back legs down keeping his back straight up. "Now you can jump off Tiny without any trouble. He's a real gentleman." As summer was holding his cheeks she said "Aren't you Tiny, aren't you, you cute little giant." Tiny snorted and shook his head. "When a horse shakes their head it's usually a gesture of friendship" added Lupe. The girls took turns riding Tiny. Lupe took him out in the pasture. He ran for a while then stopped for a few minutes to eat some of the delicious coastal Bermuda grass. When Lupe returned she said "Riding Tiny is like driving an M1 tank. I love it." Summer said "That's why Uncle Standing Bear made him our family watch dog. Just last week he killed a huge seven foot sidewinder to keep our dog ya'ai from getting bit. Ya'ai means dirt. He's always wallowing in the dirt, thus the name. And the crazy dog is always trying to find snakes to eat." Lupe scratched her head "You just let Tiny roam free?" "Of course. How else is he supposed to protect us?" "And he doesn't run away?" "It's all desert, Lupe. Where would he run off to? And besides he thinks he's our brother and family sticks together."

The girls worked with the horses all afternoon. Sophia loves animals. Her favorite part was washing the horses down, drying them off with a huge blow dryer, then brushing them out especially their manes and tails. Nellie asked Summer "Why don't you braid Happy Feet's mane?" Summer said "Happy Feet likes to be free. So why not let his hair be free. Just like us, Happy Feet has the freedom to live a good life with nothing tying him up or holding him down. Many horses today are kept confined and forced to do things without much reward or kindness. That's the way it used to be for our parents. The only reason I confine Happy Feet is to keep him safe. He couldn't survive if he were running free around here or even worse in a city. Nellie agreed.

It was a few hours before dinner. Norma drove over to Tony's to see how her girls were doing.

She knocked on the front door. Nobody answered. She walked over to the guest house and Standing Bear was sitting outside drinking an ice tea and enjoying the afternoon. Norma said "Beautiful day, isn't it." "Yes it is. Enter at your own risk. K'akana kicked me out an hour ago. She's in the kitchen with Tony talking." "Wow, how long have they been in there?" "I was in town so I don't know." "I came over to get the girls. We're going out to eat in a few hours." "Great. I haven't eaten all day. What's on the menu?" "We're going to the [Double Eagle](#) in Old Mesilla. They age their own meat and it's really good. And they have the [best bar](#) I've ever bellied up to." Norma pulls out her cellphone and calls. "Connie, where are you? I'm at the guest house. Bring all the girls with you. We need to get cleaned up to go out and eat. Ok? Bye." Norma looked at Standing Bear, then she looked at the guest house front door "I'm going in. Wish me luck." He laughed. She rings the doorbell and sticks her head inside. "Is anybody home?" "We're in the kitchen" replied K'akana, "Come on in." Norma walks in "Hey guys, how are you doing?" Tony said "Great. K'akana has been telling me about life on the reservation. Come, sit down." "I can't right now. I'm gathering my kids up to get ready for tonight." At that moment all the girls walked into the kitchen. Norma said "Tracy, Molly, your parents called. Security is going to be here any minute to pick you two up so you can get ready for tonight. Wear something nice because we're going to the Double Eagle." She looked at her girls "You ready girls? Let's go. We'll be back in two hours. Later." With that the group went their own way to prepare for the evening.

It was 7:30pm. Larry had just landed his jet ten minutes ago. The jet has a nice clothing closet and a full bath. Norma was waiting as he stepped off the jet. Larry laid a big one on her lips and his girls standing next to Norma all went "Yuuuuk, dad. Gross me out." After kissing his wife hello, he hugged his kids. He had been to Houston for a couple days on business. Nellie said "We missed you daddy." Sophia said "You look really nice, dad." Connie said "Turn around dad. I need to put your collar down in the back."

Tony pulled up in his hardened twenty six foot long bus that looks like an RV. It comfortably seats 20 people. Cletus had a couple suburbans waiting to drive along with them. The group arrived at Old Mesilla in fifteen minutes. They took the back roads. Larry loves to drive through the farm area instead of the desert along the freeway.

[The Double Eagle](#)

When you first walk into the Double Eagle, you walk by the huge antique bar then over to the hostess. As they were walking in, the bartender was ready with a special drink for Standing Bear. It was their award winning margarita except a ten year old specially aged [mezcal](#) was used instead of tequila. And as a special treat the worm was at the bottom of his drink. In return Standing Bear pulled out some bald eagle feathers and gave them to the bartender. K'akana smiled and said "You must have called ahead, big brother." He laughed and replied "I love it when a plan comes together." The barkeep asked if anybody else would like a drink. The rest of the adults said they would wait and have one with their meal.

Molly and her mom and Tracy and her parents had already arrived. The entire group was seated at a long table. At another table in the room were Cletus and three of his agents. The hostess passed out the menus and said their waitress would be with them shortly. Several other agents, dressed incognito, were positioned outside so the hostess had a helper run a menu out to them.

After they were all seated Nellie wanted to go over to the ghost room and see the chairs. "Are you sure you want to..." asked her mom, "You might actually see one of the ghosts. Then what will you do?" Nellie said "Run." Tony said "I don't know. Ghosts are pretty fast." "Don't worry I've been riding the BMX course since we moved in." Sophia said "But that's a bicycle." Nellie replied like a mafia mobster "Don't worry about it. If a ghost messes with me, I'm gonna mess with him." Everybody laughed. Larry said "Nellie, you'd make a good godfather. Go ahead and check out the room." Cletus followed her. The room was empty and dimly lit. Nellie said "You go in first, Cletus. As he walked in, the chair at the far end of the room started to move. Cletus's eyes got so huge they were ready to pop out of his head and he thought "Why do I do these things when I know I shouldn't. Feet... don't fail me now!" He picked up Nellie and tucked her under his arm then quickly walked back to the group. Norma smiled and said "What's the matter Cletus. You look like you've seen a ghost." As he wiped cold sweat from his forehead he said "I don't want to talk about it." Norma was laughing very hard. "I had them put a thin string on one of the legs to make the chair move, Cletus." He thought "Dammit, she did it again." With a happy face he said "Very funny. Haha. You got me."

Tony was sitting next to K'akana. He said "Did you know the Indigenous Peoples Protection Act was officially signed into law right here at this table?" "So you brought me to this place to impress me. I like that" as she flirtatiously looked into Tony's eyes. Then he held her hand and said "That's right. The elder leaders from all indigenous peoples including the Eskimos and the Hawaiians gathered right here in this room. The People wanted Elon to electronically sign the bill as well as all indigenous leaders. Elon was living in Las Cruces so he decided there was no better place to do it than historically significant Old Mesilla. All lands swindled away from the Indians for the last hundred years are now returned. All indigenous groups in Alaska now have their own lands. And the big one, Hawaii, as you know was returned to those who are at least one quarter indigenous Hawaiian." K'akana said "I never thought that law would be passed. It's really helped our people. So tell me more, Tony." Tony understood K'akana was being very sweet to him. And he liked it. He continued "Elon liked the ceremonial significance of major events like this so he recommended the Land Repository ceremony. The People spent well over a year seizing real estate from those who had wealth in excess of fifty million dollars and all real estate owned by foreigners. One person from each state came here to this room to formally except all reclaimed real estate in their state. Well over seventy percent of America was taken back from the super-rich and foreign investors and placed in state repositories. And it all happened right here at the Double Eagle." K'akana said "I think it's wonderful that you're so politically minded. And, ceremonies are very important to my people. We have a ceremony for all our major life, and crop, and earth events." She continued "I also know that Enrique Peña Nieto, the President of Mexico and commander-in-chief of its military, was apprehended and brought here to Old Mesilla last year. And Joaquín Gamboa Pascoe, the secretary general of the Confederation of Mexican Workers came here, too. Elon represented the People of the United States when he decreed Mexico would now be a Direct Democracy. All the papers were signed. Instead of being executed, Enrique was allowed to live in a prison. Joaquín went home to work on the mammoth project. And as we all know the People commissioned a half million professionals and a half million soldiers to go to Mexico to make sure it happened." Tony was impressed to see K'akana was knowledgeable about political events. K'akana said "What do you say we give politics a rest and think about what delicious dish we will happily devour tonight." Tony agreed.

K'akana opened her [menu](#), looked it over, chuckled, and said "Bacon Wrapped Borracho (*drunk*) Shrimp! Well, if you're going to eat a shrimp you might as well get him drunk first. Right, Tony?" Tony laughed and suggested that they get the appetizer and share it. She agreed. Summer and Lupe were sitting across from their parents. Summer nudges Lupe and whispers "They're sharing stuff now." Lupe said "Let's see if they sample each other's drinks." Summer said "Sharing spit and not minding each other's fishies is very important in a relationship." Then both started giggling. Tony asked "What's the matter, girls?" Summer said "Nothing, Uncle Tony. Lupe was just telling me a joke." They looked at their parents then they looked at each other as they were pointing to the margaritas on the menu and started giggling again.

Nellie said "Do they have hamburgers here?" Larry said "They've got the biggest cheeseburger you've ever seen in your life, Nellie. It's almost as big as you are." Nellie twisted her face "Naaaah. You're pulling my leg, daddy." Connie said "No really Nellie, see, look here." Then she showed her the [giant chile cheeseburger](#) on the menu. "Woow, that is huge. If you cut it like a pizza we could all have a slice. I love pizza. A pizzaburger!"

The waitress came up to take their orders. Speaking with a Russian accent, she introduced herself as Natasha and asked if they were ready. Sophia said "You have a cool accent. Are you from Russia?" Natasha said "Thank you. Yes, I'm from Vladivostok. It's the part of Russia people never think about." Larry looked at Sophia and said "If you listen to her accent, it sounds a pinch Asian. That's because her home is right next to Korea and Japan. And she probably knows those languages too." Norma said "You're a long way from home, Natasha. What brings you here?" "This year I completed my Phd in physics at New Mexico State. Believe it or not, NMSU has one of the best engineering schools in the world. A little over a month ago I was recruited by the People to work at White Sands. The pay is good but I work in a room with just a few people and no windows. It's very isolated. So I waitress some of the week nights and on the weekends. God it's nice to talk to people." Lupe laughed and said "I know exactly what you mean." Tony then kicked her leg under the table and he shook his head no, meaning to not say anything. Natasha looked at Lupe and said "That's right, listen to your father. You must always be aware of your surroundings. Never be complacent." Larry stood up and motioned Cletus over. The three of them walked to a corner in the room. He asked Natasha what she meant by that statement. She told Larry she was working with the two older professors who used to be Lupe's foster parents. She showed them her top secret clearance badge. "I've seen Lupe at the facility but I haven't met her yet. It's still shocking to see it is a young teenager who made such a major breakthrough. She's just a sweet kid who giggles a lot. Larry was relieved. Then he and Cletus hugged her and thanked her for her contributions. He motioned for Lupe to come over. "Lupe, I'd like you to meet Natasha Kabinski. She works with your foster parents at the facility." "Lupe said "I thought you looked familiar. At work you wear a baggy smock and always have your hair up in a tight bun and you wear these thick black plastic glasses. Right?" Natasha said "Yes. When I'm working here, I take my hair down and wear contacts. I like to look nice for my customers." Natasha shook Lupe's hand. "It's an honor to meet you. I couldn't say anything earlier for obvious reasons." Natasha closed her eyes and breathed in "Wow. I'm actually touching the hand of the person who has given us the ability to travel to distant galaxies. Lupe said "Here, give me a hug. If John and Mary want you to work with them then you're an incredible person." Natasha said "Your foster parents are the best people in the world to work

for. In just a month they've taught me so much." Lupe smiled and said "Mary's teachings opened a door in my mind that enabled me to see dark energy and temporal events." Lupe apologized but called Molly over and said "Molly, is this lady a threat?" Molly slowly walked around Natasha and said "I see intense admiration and a little fear. But the fear comes from her childhood when she was mistreated. She's simply afraid we might hurt her like her foster parents did in Russia." Lupe said to Natasha "Now I understand why you just used the term foster parents. I'm glad you've finally found some foster parents that will treat you with dignity and respect and I'm sure a lot of love. John and Mary love me very much. Now I feel uncomfortable with you being my waitress." Natasha said "Don't worry. I do this to get out and be with people. Who better to take care of than my boss? So make yourself comfortable while I make sure all of you have a very nice evening. Ok?" Lupe hugged her again before they went and sat down.

Tracy and Summer gave Lupe that what the heck is going on look. Lupe said "Don't worry, she's one of us. She works for me." They then leaned back in their chairs with an understanding look. "Oooh. Ok."

Natasha asked "Is everybody ready to order?" She first took their drink orders. Natasha passed the drink order sheet over to Salvador, the bartender standing behind to her. Then to the meal orders. Tony spoke up "We'll take the Chateaubriand Bouquetiere for two. The stuffed tomatoes look very good. And as an appetizer we'd like one order of Bacon Wrapped Borracho Shrimp." Larry and Norma liked the idea of two people sharing something together so they ordered the same. Silvia ordered the petite filet mignon. Tracy's parents also ordered the meal for two. Standing Bear got the Blackened Halibut. And the kids ordered two giant cheeseburgers to be cut up into eight pieces. They also ordered baked fries and milkshakes. Cletus and the guys got the Steak Double Eagle and then promised themselves to exercise it off tomorrow. Regular cheeseburgers, fries, and malts were prepared and sent out to the guys guarding outside.

During the meal Norma spoke up "Guess what. After we get back from the rodeo, I'm officially opening my boot business." Tracy's parents Hazel and Bob congratulated her. Silvia said "Way to go, girl. I wish I had your energy. It takes everything I've got just to keep up with Molly." Norma said "There were so many people in El Paso who had boot experience it was very easy to get rolling. And for easy brand recognition I'm naming the business Norma Corona Boot and Leather Craft Company." Bob said "Are they going to be western boots." Norma replied "I'll make the traditional western boot, and a posh boot with a New York fashion flair, and a steel toed work boot made with thick bull hide to wear better and last longer." Hazel said "You need to show us your catalog some time." "I'll do better than that" as she waved to Cletus to bring them out. The girls gave us your exact shoe sizes. One of the agents wheeled out a cart with boots for each person in the group. "All my boots have a comfortable inner sole cushion. You're gonna love em." Norma said "A computer driven shear cuts the leather blanks out. But the rest of the manufacturing process is completely done by hand. There's nothing better than handmade products using real leather and not that fake Asian stuff. I'm also coming out with a line of women's shoes. They'll also be made out of premium quality leather. I'm using calf skin, deer hide, and lizard skin. The fit and finish will be perfect."

Cletus was enjoying his delicious aged to perfection perfectly cooked 14 ounce steak when his cellphone rang. It was a person representing the group of foreign relations overseers. She said a woman named Ziyóu (*Sue ee yo*) wanted Norma and Larry to immediately come to China.

She was the Chinese lady who Norma briefly talked to at the freedom train restaurant a little over a year ago. She was leading her people to become a direct democracy. All the males in any police or military capacity have been relieved of duty. They were all to become farmers or factory workers. The people of China were sick and tired of the testosterone infused saber rattling going on by the male military in their country. Security across China was now in the hands of women. She wants Norma and Larry come to insure the e-transition will be smooth and orderly. With her call to Norma she is formally requesting Google's proven computer technology for the People to run their country. This is a huge moment in human history. Hundreds of thousands of Chinese youth for decades have been attending American colleges and universities. For almost the last four years they have seen firsthand the greatness of self-governance. The word spread throughout the country of China. Now Ziyóu with her three hundred million army of mothers are making it happen.

Cletus walked over to Norma and said "I'm sorry to interrupt but you have an important call," as he hands her the phone. Norma said "Hello?" The person on the line said "Hello Norma. Do you remember last year at the Freedom Train Restaurant when a small Chinese lady behind you stood up and gave a toast?" Norma yelled "Ziyóu! It's an honor to be speaking with you." She said "No, the honor is mine. Remember when you said the universe has brought me to this place for a reason. Then you said freedom just doesn't happen. And I said I know. I have to make it happen." Norma responded "Yes, of course. But I had no idea." Ziyóu laughed and said "Neither did I! Actually it wasn't me. It was our army of mothers. I'm just their spokeswoman." Norma said "This is amazing Ziyóu. How can I help you?" "Come to China as soon as possible and bring Larry and members of his team with you. I need his help. And my people admire you very much, Norma. You're a symbol that the People here are embracing." Norma said "I don't understand." Ziyóu said "The ruling class of China were rapidly becoming a bloated self-serving bourgeoisie. They had been bellying up to the graft and corruption table way too much for my people to tolerate. Your Larry and people like him are remnants of the past American bourgeoisie. But you are the counter balance that legitimizes it all. When my people saw how a regular woman saved the life of a very important man they realized that you two depended on each other. Separately he represented a previous ruling class that subjugated the masses, and you were a regular blue collar worker. But together there is balance. My job is to bring all regular workers together and give them the power, then have people like Larry act only as guides. This is the next step in the evolution of my country." Norma said "I'm very flattered that you would say that about me. But I'm really just like anybody else." Ziyóu said "Exactly. Would you please come? The sooner the better." Norma replied "Yes. Of course, Ziyóu. We are leaving right away. Ok? I can't wait to see you in person. Take care. I'm going to give the phone back to our security guy. Bye, and stay safe!"

Norma was exploding with enthusiasm as she turned to Larry. He asked "Was that Ziyóu, the leader of the army of Chinese mothers?" Norma's eyes twinkled and she replied "Yes. And I promised her we would leave immediately. You need to delegate everything you're doing here and come with me to China. This is way too big. And you need to bring a small army of geeks

with you to make sure the transition happens with no problems." Larry was completely confused "One short phone call between you and the leader of their revolution and it's done. Amazing! Like Lord Tennyson sort of said: Mine is not to make reply or to reason why, mine is but to do and get it done." Norma had a vexed look said "Great. So how fast can your jet get us there?"

So dinner was cut short for Norma and Larry. She left her girls in good hands with Tony. It was decided the trip to San Antonio was still on for the kids. Larry and Norma took off that night bound for Beijing, China.

On the long flight over, Norma was talking about how hard it was growing up in Newark. She talked about hanging with her friends at their homes until dinner time hoping they would invite her to stay so she could have something to eat. Her mom would always walk her to the Goodwill store to see if there might be something nice that would fit her. The taxes on cigarettes were high so her dad would stand out on the street corner in the evenings and illegally sell singles with no tax. He would split the profits with his supplier. "Dad said it helped pay the rent." Larry said "You know I never really grasped the concept of being poor until that day when I was 24. I was traveling to New York City for this meeting. The flight to Newark was cheaper so I took it because the train ride from Newark to New York was cheap and it took only an hour to reach my destination. I had to be frugal back then. I took a cab from the Newark airport to the train station which was only a short distance away. Or in my mind it was only five dollars away. As we were driving, out of nowhere this hail storm hit and the taxi driver ducked under a bridge that went over railroad tracks. It was a short storm but the hail was as big as golf balls. I got out of the car to stretch. I get claustrophobic. There were several bums standing around a barrel with a warm fire going. I also saw a man and a woman with her daughter pushing a shopping cart containing everything they owned. The man came up to me and in broken English he asked if I could spare something because his little daughter was sick. He needed to buy medicine for her. I walked over and put my hand on her forehead. She was burning up and almost passed out. I said this child needs to go to the hospital immediately. The mother gave me a totally helpless look. She kept repeating the same words in Spanish I didn't understand. She said "Por favor ayude a mi hija." And then she started crying. I put the three of them in the cab and we went to the nearest hospital. I ran through the emergency room door carrying the little girl in my arms and told them to please help her. They wanted a five hundred dollar deposit. Without a thought I immediately paid it. I missed the meeting that day. My parents were all worried. I stayed with Pablo and Magdalena for a couple days at the hospital until I knew their daughter was going to be ok. They were just five years older than me but they looked twice my age. I guess that's what living a hard life does to a person. I left them with fifteen hundred dollars because I knew they had nothing. After being with Pablo I realized he was a good man and all he needed was a break. I hoped that money helped. Anyway that was my first experience with real poverty and Newark, NJ.

Norma had a blank expression, just staring into space in the interior of that jet. "Larry I don't know what to say... Except, thank you... This is a strange universe. Pablo and Magdalena are my parents. I remember you now. The nurse said a day longer and I would have died." Larry looked at her "Norma, I don't scare easy, but..." She interrupted him beaming a smile and said "Sometimes things happen that we have no control over. This is our destiny, babe." He grinned and said "You know I love it when you call me babe," and they smooched and smooched.

[The power of mothers](#)

As Norma and Larry were stepping off the plane in Beijing, Ziyóu and her top regional lieutenants were at the base of the stairs to greet them. When Norma reached the bottom Ziyóu embraced her. As she was hugging Norma she said "Hello my friend. And thank you. It was seeing your spunk that day that convinced me to get up off my butt and give it my all. Please come and let me introduce you to some of the freedom mothers. As Norma was involved in the pomp and pageantry a special foreign dignitary should be accorded, Larry was greeted with a rapid cursory hello then he and his workers were quickly ushered away to begin installing the system.

This was clearly Norma's moment. Norma didn't quite fully grasp it but the Chinese had elevated her as the representative of the American People. After being introduced to Ziyóu's top workers, she stopped for a moment and looked around. The airport outside including as far as you could see was completely filled with people straining to get a glimpse of what was going on. The people were chanting phrases that Norma didn't understand. But she saw their faces. Faces of pure happiness and pride. Ziyóu stopped and asked "Where is your translator?" Norma didn't think to bring one. "Here Norma, take this one," as she gave her the ear bud and credit card sized module. "Now you can understand the wonderful things my people are shouting." Because of Mark's groundbreaking work, everybody in the crowd had his instant voice translator on their cellphone. Ziyóu handed Norma her iphone and asked that she say a few words to the people at the airport who had been waiting for hours to see her and to the people of her country. Norma was shocked and numbed by all that was going on. She had to collect herself. She thought "What would my girls tell me?..... Mom, just be yourself." She took a deep breath and slowly let it out. She noticed the TV camera to her right. "Hello. Can everybody understand me?" The crowd yelled yes in Mandarin. "Great. Thank you very much for allowing me to come to your country. I've never been out of the United States much less to China. You see I was born to a family with a lot of love but no money. Up until the Big Change my entire life took place within five miles of my home. In my early and middle twenties I had a tough time making enough money to feed and house my children. It was a daily struggle and many times I felt I was losing. I used to work at Wal-Mart. The stingy owners didn't pay me enough to have any kind of good life. I had to get financial assistance from the government. And sometimes that wasn't enough. Sometimes I had to sell my blood to get us by until next payday. And it wasn't just me. It seemed everybody was struggling. In a country of three hundred million, over fifty million of us were on food stamps. That means without help from the government those fifty million would have gone hungry. Over one million six hundred thousand children were homeless. They and their parents had to live in temporary daily shelters, or in cars, or on the streets. I've never disclosed this to anyone except my husband, but for almost a year as a child my mom and dad and I were homeless too. Sometimes we had to forage through trash cans to find food to keep us alive. America was the richest country on earth, yet there I was, not knowing where my next meal was coming from. So I knew since I was very young that the extreme rich had absolutely no social conscience. They didn't care who lived or who died. They didn't care if others achieved a good life. All they cared about was making more money for themselves.

I believe that in the end all that matters is love and caring. And, that was impossible as long as these greedy pieces of human excrement were in control of our lives.

I also believe that we are creatures of habit, drawn to the safety and comfort of the familiar. Even if the familiar is holding us down and hurting us. But there comes a moment, a point of clarity when we understand what is happening. It was that moment, that day when we the people of the United States finally woke up and realized there was a better way. That we could have a better life. And the solution was elegantly simple. Just continue manufacturing, growing food, and providing services for ourselves the same as before. In other words continue giving us what we needed to live. The only difference was we paid us enough to have a good life. We no longer relied on a profit oriented employer to pay us! And now you are giving yourselves the same thing." Norma started to clap while she was chanting freedom over and over. She lifted her hands up and shouted "Let me hear you. Sue ee yo, Sue ee yo, Sue ee yo....." The airport crowd went crazy. The chanting was so strong the ground shook. After some minutes of celebratory chanting, she calmed the crowd down and continued "After the Big Change I was able to have my children go to a decent school. I could feed them good healthy food. They had beautiful clothes to wear. There is no charge to see a doctor or go to the hospital. I was able buy a nice home and a nice car." She stopped and looked around and then in the camera she said "How could that be? A large majority of us were struggling before the Big Change. Then afterward everybody was living a good life. But nothing changed! We were still providing ourselves with the stuff we needed same as before."

Norma walked over to a young couple at the temporary barriers and asked them "What do you think the difference was?" The camera turned to the couple and the woman said "You got rid of the middle man who was chocking you to death." Norma smiled and jumped the barrier and said now it's your turn to do that. This is your time! This is your life! She hugged the young couple and their six year old child and then started moving through the crowd saying hello to everyone. Security and the camera crew were going nuts trying to keep up with Norma as she was moving through the crowd shaking hands and hugging people. The TV newscaster was beside himself as he described this woman walking "helter-skelter" through the crowd. Then a light went off in his head and he said "She cares more about congratulating the people than her own welfare. She cares more about the welfare of our People than about herself. Look, she's calling Ziyóu to come join her as she's moving through the crowd." Norma paused until Ziyóu was next to her. Then they continued. On her cellphone, Norma asked that everybody not push because the last thing we wanted was to have Ziyóu get hurt. Amazingly the crowd listened. A greater sense of oneness across the nation was felt as they saw on TV these two amazing mothers walking for several hours through the crowd. Norma kept the iphone on so everybody could hear the conversations that occurred with the people they embraced. Norma continually used the words "my family", "my brother", and "my sister" to address the people she was speaking with. Norma was so filled with emotion she blurted out "God I wished I was Chinese right now. This is such a momentous time in human history. Thank you for allowing me to be here with you." As Ziyóu moved through the crowd with Norma she said "This is why I wanted you to be here. The expressiveness from your energy and heartfelt emotions are exactly what we needed." As Norma was going through the crowd she said "I appreciate that, Ziyóu, but we're just getting started." She came to a couple in their thirties with a handsome teenage son. She asked their names. Her name is Huan (*happiness*) and his is Dingbang (*protect the country*). Their son is named Xue (*studious*).

Norma shook Dingbang's and his son's hands and she hugged Huan. She said "Fate brought me to you. Your people will finally achieve happiness by protecting your country from the inside. You have protected yourselves from a small group of ruthless power hungry greedy Chinese who for years have feed off of your labors. Dingbang, now your very smart and dedicated son will work to benefit the lives of the People of China." She continued "With my husband's computer and programming help, every person in this great country will have an account at the People's bank and every month all of you will give yourselves enough money to have a good life. But in return you will continue making things, growing food, and providing needed services to make all of this a success!" For a couple minutes there was a thunderous roar of approval from the crowd. She continued "Now money is no longer a problem. Like we are doing right now in America, I can visualize giant desalinization plants all along your coast bringing in billions and billions of gallons of fresh clean water to irrigate the desert lands of your country. Food will be bountiful. No one will go hungry." Again the crowd roared. "The air in our giant cities was heavily polluted before we made the Big Change. Now we are moving to photovoltaic and wind energy." Norma sees a camera crew guy with a bottle of water. She takes it from him and holds it up high with her other hand underneath. As she is pouring it she said "Your air will soon become as pure as this water flowing onto my hand. No more lung disease and sickness because of greed." Again the crowd roared. Norma's statements were infectious. Ziyóu walked up to another couple and got their names and hugged them. She said "Now our Press will be free and open. Our universities will be free and open. People will be able to say what they think without punishment. There will be a posting of job opportunities all across our great country. Soon you can choose the work you desire, not the work you were forced into." The crowd went nuts screaming in approval. Families across China watching this on TV started to cry with joy. Both women continued through the crowd greeting and hugging everybody and talking about many of the great things their people can now have.

After two hours Ziyóu was completely spent. She and Norma gave their apologies for having to leave. They thanked everybody for coming. Ziyóu closed by saying "Last year I went to America to see what freedom was like. I went to the Peoples Monument and Museum and fate allowed me to meet this great woman in a restaurant. She stood up and in a passionate way she thanked everybody that could hear her. The people sitting at their tables eating their meals stopped and applauded and cheered. I saw the look on all their faces. A look of true happiness. Then I stood up and said in a loud and clear voice "I'd like to give a toast. To the people of America who are the shining beacon of freedom for the rest of the world. May my people of China soon become free too." She paused and smiled "And now that day has come. And like Norma thanked everybody in that restaurant for her freedom that day, I'd like to thank you." Ziyóu looked all across the crowd with her hands held high "THANK YOU, my people for making me and the rest of you a free people." Then she started to cry tears of happiness. "And to my precious fragile mother watching this at home, "Thank you, mom, for taking me to Tiananmen Square to protest on that fateful day of June 4th, 1989. The light from your fire has shown me the way." She stopped a moment to collect herself and continued "The most important thing now is enabling you to run our country electronically. Norma has promised me that her husband will soon have the system in place so we can proudly run our own government. We will be talking more about this very soon on television and on the internet. Thank you again and I love you all." [\(click\)](#) [\(click\)](#)

The people at the airport and at home cheered and started chanting her name as they departed in a chopper to the rooftop of the hotel where Norma was going to stay. As they were flying Norma said "I'm sorry for the recent deaths of over thirty thousand mothers and their children at Tiananmen Square. Ziyóu said we knew we had to do something big. We chose the fourth of June in respect for the massacre that occurred the same day in 1989. At that time I was just a small girl. And as I just told my people, my mother and I were part of the crowd protesting that day. I vividly remember us running to get away as the army was slaughtering those behind us. For almost 28 years these sadistic rulers were able to keep a lid on it by offering jobs in place of freedom. Foolishly, we took it.

But this time on June 4th we marshaled together over a million wives and mothers to occupy the square. We believed the army wouldn't move against us. We thought who would kill mothers holding their children? But they did! Those sorry bastards did!!!" Ziyóu stopped talking to calm herself down and wipe away the tears. "It was this ruthless arrogant slaughter of innocent wives and mothers and their children by the demonic ruling class that woke the sleeping giant. The entire country shut down in the weeks that followed. Wives and mothers everywhere turned against their sons and husbands who were in the army or with the police. Any male in any capacity in law enforcement became a persona non grata. Nobody would have anything to do with them. Three hundred million mothers took to the streets in all of China. They were screaming for the deaths of all men in the military. We finally had enough and it ended.

Only women are in the military now. The only police you'll see wearing a uniform will be a woman. And as you probably know, last week we executed every member of our Central Committee including their families. Retribution for the murdering of thirty thousand innocents on June 4th! Now we three hundred million mothers have cleaned house. And, now we need a new start. Now we need your help Norma. We need several television appearances where we explain how the process will work. I want us there to symbolize the people are in control in both my country and in yours. Larry and his people will explain the process. Our presence will assure the People that we are indeed becoming a direct democracy! This has to be done quickly and efficiently. For all this to work it must be done immediately!" Norma held Ziyóu's hand and said "Don't worry. Larry and his small army of geeks can and are doing it. We'll first start with depositing money in every account of every Chinese citizen. This will carry them until the rest is completed." Ziyóu clasped Norma's hand and gratefully responded "Thank you."

Ziyóu continued "My family is waiting at the hotel. I want to introduce them to you. My daughters have been following you in the news. They're very anxious to meet you. They still don't understand how you could take down five killers last month in San Francisco." Norma rolled her eyes and in a sweet innocent little voice she said "Just don't get me pissed off." Ziyóu laughed and also said "I worked for years as a geneticist. You look very much American Indian." Norma said "I'm kind of embarrassed about it and I usually don't tell anybody because they were known as ruthless killers, but my parents are Apache Indian from Arizona. They moved north to seek a better life, but with the racial prejudice it was even harder on them." Ziyóu said "If that's the case then you are ancient Chinese. We have tested the DNA of the Indian tribes in North America and found genetic markers indicating we are from the same people, Norma. That's true especially with the western Indian tribes who didn't intermarry with

the Europeans." Norma had no idea. But with that revelation they both felt much closer knowing they were of the same people. Norma smiled and said "I am Chinese."

Norma's phone rang. It was Connie. "I just saw you on TV. Mom you never told us about being homeless. Now I understand why you went out of your way to be good to Lupe and Uncle Tony when we first met. Are you doing ok? You looked tired after walking around for two hours." "Yes baby, I'm just fine. And your dad is too. It looks like I'll be here for at least several weeks. And I don't know how long Larry will be here. Are you going to be ok?" "We'll be fine. In fact we were hoping you would say that because Uncle Tony moved an extra king size bed into Lupe's bedroom. We like watching movies on the giant screen in the pyramid. The turtles come up and we feed them crickets. They have to be alive though, or the turtles won't eat them." Norma said "Sounds like you guys are doing just fine." Norma continued talking with her girls. Then she talked to Tony thanking him for everything and then she asked about enrolling her girls in school. He said Cletus and his men are taking care of it. And they will have invisible body guards at the elementary and the middle schools. She gave her love to the girls said she would call them every day. She then got Cletus on the phone and told him to make sure all the kids stayed safe in San Antonio. He assured her they would be. "And Cletus, please remember to get your response time down as low as possible. See you later big guy. And good luck with the girls!"

[The End for now...](#)

(Will release second book hopefully by or before June, 2015)

Personal note: It's not necessary, but if you really enjoyed the book and would like to send something, this is my mailing address: Eugene E. Hartley, P.O. Box 1131, Castroville, Texas, 78009. Thanks.

If you would like to send an email, my address is bigchange4freedom@gmail.com.

[Postscript](#)

...whenever any form of government becomes destructive... ...it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness. Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shown that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such government... ..taken from the Declaration of Independence of the United States of America, July 4, 1776.

[I am America](#)



[Appendix - the Amendment](#)

We must write ourselves a Constitutional Amendment to fix the mess we're in. I spent a considerable amount of time writing one. Then I set it aside for a few weeks and came back and read it. It was good, but very detailed. So I didn't include it here. But, I do want to spotlight a few things I'm advocating for, and please understand that we all need to be involved in writing our Amendment:

[Branches of Government](#)

*The legislative branch will now be the voting citizens of the United States. Our computer technology, programming talent, and a US only internet grid will assist us.

*The executive branch will now be called the administrative branch which will no longer have a President. Smaller groups of several thousand randomly chosen people (fluidly and randomly adding and removing members over time) across the US will oversee the operations of each department in the administrative branch of government. For example, one group of several thousand people will oversee the Justice Department, by actual presence at facilities and by communicating online. In addition to the overseers, we will have groups to audit and investigate the departments and the overseers. The investigators goal would be to positively augment the success of the agency. So in effect you have two groups seeing if a department is functioning properly. The overseers give direction and the auditors and investigators provide legitimate independent feedback to the overseers and to us, the People. Once a month a report will be published online for all the People of the US to scrutinize. The administrative branch departments will no longer focus on businesses making money and profits. They will direct their attention to helping make our lives safer, better and happier. Whistleblowers will be rewarded instead of punished.

*The judicial branch will still exist, but the decisions of the Supreme Court will be reviewed by the People. All Supreme Court and appellate decisions will be reviewed by several thousand randomly chosen people, some who are educated in law and some who are common everyday people but all of them must have demonstrated caring, compassion, and intelligence. The review will also include the Court's decisions whether or not to hear a case. Again many auditors and investigators will constantly be looking at what the overseers are doing to determine if they are truly independent, caring, and honest.

[Money](#)

*The most important part of the Big Change will be us paying us instead of depending on an employer to do it. A minimum of \$10,000 will be deposited monthly into the account of all adult citizens. \$1,500 for citizens under 18.

*The US will have one bank called the Peoples Bank which will be owned and run by the People. The only money a person can receive and spend is the money in their account at the

Peoples bank. For example, if a person wants to sell a personal asset like a car then the funds will be transferred within the accounts of the buyer and seller at the bank. This recorded purchasing activity is necessary because our computers have to foresee potential shortages and ramp up production to meet demand. People will still be able to barter (trade) merchandise with "boot".

*All prices will not increase. A special new agency will be formed to review all pricing and to make any price reductions they feel necessary.

*No more taxes of any sort at any level of any government body.

*Today I heard California governor Jerry Brown say "we don't have enough money for that". Having enough money will no longer determine whether or not we do something. The only shortage will be not having enough people or resources dedicated to handle a need. And if we feel it's necessary we can direct more to the effort. But money... Well money is just a medium of exchange now. That's all.

*There will no longer be homeless or destitute people in the US. It's against the law.

*We will continually determine the baseline of acceptability to have a good life. In other words we will always monitor how much money a person needs to have a minimum acceptable good lifestyle.

*No more federal reserve and our national debt will immediately be paid off.

*Employees of a company will own the company equally. Shares of ownership in a company are not bought and sold. When an employee leaves a company, they give up their voting shares. New employees will gain an ownership interest in the company. The main reason is to give employees voting rights.

*Price of gasoline is capped at 2 dollars a gallon. Unusual extreme usage of gasoline by a person will be investigated and if necessary controlled. Natural gas, propane, diesel, home heating oil and other petroleum based products will also have low price caps. And in times of need like weather extremes, getting fuel to those affected will be given top priority.

*All existing debts of any kind owed by individuals are now paid off.

All future loans will be interest free and loan payments will be directly deducted from the individual's bank account at the Peoples bank the moment their account is deposited each month. The maximum aggregate loan payments is 40% of the person's monthly deposit. The maximum payout period is ten years for homes and real estate, and three years for everything else. Examples: A new 2,000 sqft home bought for \$50,000 (2,000\$25/sqft) will have a minimum payment of \$278.00 (50,000/180pmts).

*The maximum price for autos and light trucks is \$25,000. Maximum price for piston aircraft is \$50,000, turbo-prop is \$150,000, and small passenger jet is \$300,000. Maximum price for semi-tractor trailer rigs is \$75,000. The quality of today's vehicles will be increased as the public demands.

*Individuals can continue to gamble but only up to the amount that is in their special savings account set aside specifically for gambling. Only 5% of the individual's monthly deposit can be set aside for gambling. Risking real estate or personal property in gambling is not allowed. Money only.

*Corporations will cease to exist. They will simply be called businesses where the employees are equal owners. The Walton family of Wal-Mart will not own the company anymore. But the movers and shakers in the company will continue giving positive direction. And the employees of companies can't just give all of themselves a million dollar salary. By super-majority vote, the People of the US will give salary minimums and maximums for all types of employees in all businesses in all industries. This type of control is important to avoid shortages and to have salary fairness for all the People across the US.

*The transition through the Big Change must have elegance and harmony with almost nobody being hurt. In the spirit of this, all stockholders before the Big Change will be able to convert their ownership interest to money before employees of corporations take over ownership. The maximum amount redeemed in total stock ownership by an individual is one million dollars. So if a person has one hundred million in his stock portfolio then they will receive no more than one million dollars. Another example would be the owner of a billion dollar sports franchise who would only receive a million dollars. And the players on sports franchises will make a maximum of one million dollars per year.

Money cannot be invested to earn interest, or rents, or leases, or dividends. In other words there is no more "passive income" of any sort allowed anymore. But people can still sell personal assets like cars, boats, planes, and collections. And you can't just live off your accumulated wealth. Unless you are retired, you have to work if you want to live in the United States of America. And we don't allow cronyism or nepotism at work unless it's a small successful family business or a farm.

Money is no longer our [God Almighty](#).

Justice and security

*The defense department will retain its same structure except the commander and chief will be the People of the United States. A random ever changing group of several thousand voting citizens will oversee and manage the activities of the defense department. Then once a month the People of the US will receive a report from the overseers. Another new change will be accountability. Every person working for the department of defense and working for large defense contractors will keep a timesheet of everything they did every day in one hour increments. The records must be updated contemporaneously (when it happens). All defense contractors with annual sales to the government of \$100 million dollars or more will be owned

and controlled by the People of the United States. The People will be in control of the purse strings, therefore we will know what every penny is spent on.

*The People will have direct control of the FBI, CIA, department of homeland security, and all other federal law enforcement agencies. Like the defense department, these departments will have overseers and another body of investigators and auditors.

*All military ordnance including our nuclear arsenal will be controlled by the People, with a backup group who must follow a pre-determined set of instructions in case communications are halted. Extreme care will be taken in deciding who has their hands on the nuclear trigger.

*The Supreme Court cases of [DeShaney v Winnebago Dep't of Social Service \(1989\)](#) and [Estate of Sinthasomphone v Milwaukee \(1992\)](#) and [Castle Rock v Gonzales \(2005\)](#) are now reversed because the "State" *absolutely has the **obligation** to protect its citizens*. The Justices of the Supreme Court are now mandated to insure that the health, safety, and wellbeing of the People come **first** before any rights of those hired by the People to protect us. That includes but not limited to all police, attorneys, judges, and employees of agencies given the responsibility to protect, like child protective services. These hired employees of the People will not abrogate their responsibilities. They must insure we are protected.

*All employees of all governmental entities in the US are both criminally and civilly liable for their actions while working as a government employee. No exemptions will be allowed. Example: If it was found a judge was negligent in carrying out his/her duties then they are fully and completely liable for their actions and will be punished accordingly.

*All robots built must be easily destroyed by small arms fire or flames or water immersion. In other words robots must not be built to be impregnable. And they must be trackable using GPS. Robots must never have the ability to make other robots.

*Any bribes to any public workers will carry severe punishment.

*Our police today are a big problem with brutality and theft and framing of innocent people. They are also acting as hired help for the powerful to kill the masses if it comes to that. All those militarized police infringing on people's rights while searching for the Boston bomber is a perfect example. One large step to stop this is to have every 19 year old, who hasn't had any problem with the authorities so far in their life, go through police training and work for a least a year in law enforcement. Each year, 10% of all people 20 to 35 will also go through police training until we have a society that is mostly police. We will maintain our peace keeper's license for life. No more police dominating the masses when everyone is a policeman. No more feudalistic approach of having the king using his army to suppress the peasants.

*Our judicial system needs to be fixed. As a direct democracy we will require attorneys to find the truth and not get paid to advocate for their client. Truth instead of money. Comprehensive records of judges and attorneys and police investigators work must be reviewed by completely independent sources. Polygraph tests and other forms of lie detection must be given periodically to all people in the justice system. A video/sound record must be independently made and

retained of all investigative work and all court proceedings. Except for murder, all jail sentences will be lowered to just a few months. The catch is eight times a day the convicted will be tased with a device like a cattle prod. The worse the crime, the stronger and longer the tasing. All people convicted for drug use will be released. A person convicted for illegally selling drugs will go through the tasing process for a month, then released.

*The grand jury system will be completely revamped. Three unbiased attorneys will preside over all grand jury hearings. The prosecutor will continue to present information to a grand jury. But up to ten "friends of the court" may also present evidence and testimony to a grand jury. And as with all court cases that go to trial, the proceedings of all grand jury hearings will be reviewed by a large independent body of people randomly chosen out of the population. This large body of overseers can change the decision of whether or not a case will go to trial.

*No Ex Post Facto or Double Jeopardy laws of any sort will be permitted anymore. The federal government has this "hate crime" loophole they are using for trying people twice. That is now outlawed. We have scientific methods to discover the truth. The initial court case will be sufficient, and if we screw up it's our fault, not the defendants. But if evidence comes out after the court case is decided that exonerates a defendant, then he/she will be permitted to have an immediate retrial. If during an initial trial, evidence is presented that clearly shows a person guilty or innocent and the jury decides otherwise, then the jury is prejudiced and they should be prosecuted on a felony charge. If the prosecutor or judge uses this as a device to intimidate a jury into voting a certain way, then they will be charged and imprisoned.

*All drug offenders will receive a hug and a place to live and help from a support group and medical treatment to get them off of addiction. And actually get them off addiction.

*All prisoners will be given a polygraph test to get a better idea if they were really guilty. Those with test results indicating they were innocent will be retried in an independent court away from their original trial jurisdiction. The original judge, attorneys, and investigators will all undergo a polygraph exam concerning the case. If wrong doing is discovered, then the perpetrators (the judge and/or the attorneys and/or the investigating policemen) will go to jail for six months and receive nice long shock treatments eight times a day.

*Attorneys will never be used by a business to bully others or to prolong resolving a wrong. Attorneys will never be paid by their clients or any other party. The People will pay attorneys to find the truth, and they'll be well paid. All attorneys will undergo lie detector testing during and after all cases they work on. If they acted in any other way other than finding the truth, they lose their license and go to jail for a six months with taser treatments 8 times a day.

*Our security forces must be spread evenly among the states. So, military bases will exist in every state in the US.

*If there is a defect in a product that could cause death, then the individuals responsible within the company are criminally responsible if they don't immediately report and fix it. The Chevy cobalt ignition switch failure is an example. 13 people have died because of the ignition problems on Cobalts that some people at Chevy had been hiding for 10 years. Many people died

because of the defect, yet they didn't do anything to fix the problem. Nobody has been held criminally liable for this! Same thing is true with Toyota's gas pedals sticking. The one billion dollar fine they got hit with is chump change. People need to go to jail because they knew of the problem for years yet did nothing about it until people started dying. I would want immediate execution of the perpetrators, but a more humane approach will be a six month jail sentence with tasing eight times a day.

*Except for a portion of the 5th amendment, all human rights laws on the books and in the Constitution will continue. The text of the 5th is: *"No person shall be held to answer for a capital, or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a Grand Jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or in the Militia, when in actual service in time of War or public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offense to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb; nor shall be compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use, without just compensation."* Regarding this amendment, I believe the part where a person can't testify against himself was put there to avoid torture. We need to know if we are safe and protected by using polygraph tests on those employees in our Justice system and on suspected criminals. Torture will be outlawed, but accurate polygraph exams, and they must be accurate, and other similar forms of lie detection are not mental or physical torture. Therefore, I view this as getting to the truth which is much more important than allowing a guilty person to get away with a crime simply because they covered their tracks well.

*All people of the Muslim faith living in the US will undergo questioning by law enforcement using lie detection equipment. All those who are deemed a genuine potential threat must immediately leave the country.

*All US borders will be tightly sealed. That's land, water, and air. All land cargo and ocean shipping containers entering the US will be thoroughly inspected for WMDs and contraband.

*Actively employed Police must be periodically rotated and investigated via polygraph tests.

*Employees of all government agencies will be vetted to see if they have any allegiances to anything other than what's best for the People. If they do they are immediately terminated. Cronyism and nepotism is not allowed. Having your buddies and your relatives working with you is totally wrong. An exception will be a small farm and a small business startup.

*All political appointees to any position in government will be terminated. The vacated positions will be placed in the national job registry for the public to apply for.

*All police will have several video/sound (videos that also record sound) recorders on their person at all times outside of their homes. There will also be omnidirectional recorders in their vehicles. Any police officer involved in violence or killing of another person will use the video/sound recordings as evidence to prove or disprove their innocence. If an officer has the recording devices turned off then they are deemed guilty. (A fat, lazy, stupid college police officer killed an unarmed honor student next to the University of the Incarnate Word campus in

San Antonio in 2013. There was no evidence. He is walking around a free man today. Cases like this are everywhere in the US.)

*The only law enforcement people allowed in the US will be the city, county, and state police. That's all. No social security police, no park police, no school police, no Bureau of Land Management police. Nothing. If any federal entity like the FBI, CIA, BTAF, DHS, NCIS, etc. want to exert force to apprehend anybody, they must have the well trained and physically fit local police do it. Every person on a police force must be in excellent physical condition and be trained how to apprehend a person without killing or injuring them. On rare occasions, the federal agencies can assist but the local police must take the lead and be in total control. And they better not screw it up or they will be severely punished. No more excuses. "Oops, did I do that", and "Gee, I'm sorry" won't work anymore.

*SWAT teams on police forces must be curtailed and only used rarely in extremely dangerous situations. It must be shown and proven that attempts were made to mitigate or reduce the danger before it reached a head that will require a militarized police unit.

*The police cannot pour through neighborhoods requiring people to leave their homes and then have the police search the homes. A strict interpretation of the 4th amendment must be carried out to protect citizens from the police.

*Children have as much right to be safe as adults. All prospective parents must have training for raising children. Through a battery of testing they must demonstrate compassion, caring, and responsibility before they can obtain a license to have and raise children. It's better to chop the weeds out before the plants start bearing. Severe punishment must be imposed on parents who hurt and abuse their children. And children must be monitored by healthcare professionals to determine if they are leading healthy happy lives. All of the parameters of "what it takes to be a good parent" and "what observation criteria will be used by which outside sources" will of course be written, approved, and overseen by the People of the US by a super-majority vote. The people working for state agencies and other people in private business who care for the aged and disabled and those going through rehabilitation will come under the same strict rules and punishments as childcare.

*All judges across America that were placed by appointment including the Supreme Court Judges will be fired and replaced by those chosen by the People via a super-majority vote. Local judges will be hired by large randomly chosen teams of unbiased educated individuals who live in the jurisdiction of the judges.

Family

*A core family is an adult(s) who is raising a child or children. If a couple conceived a child and it is shown the fetus is healthy, then the child must be allowed to be born. Money is no longer a problem. If the couple hate each other or hate children, then too bad. The child must still survive. The parents may give the child out for adoption or one or both parents may decide to raise the child if they can pass the licensing process. Most of you don't understand Spanish, but these videos are so powerful it doesn't matter. Parents have to genuinely [care](#) for their children. That's why there is the education and licensing process. If one parent does not want the child

and the other does, both parents are still financially liable for the welfare of the child. No exceptions. There will be no more [struggling](#) for the mother just to have and raise a child. There absolutely will not be any kind of violence in the family. The [perpetrator](#) will be jailed and severely punished with 90 days of taser treatments and immediate castration.

[Agriculture and food](#)

*In addition to grain crops and pasture land, all farms, 100 acres and larger, across our country will have a substantial percentage of their crop as vegetables and fruit trees and fruit vines and a variety of farm animals. Easy access and availability to food from farms everywhere across America is essential to our survival.

*No more harmful pesticides and harmful herbicides. No more GMOs. Companies such as Monsanto will cease to exist and in their place new companies will do research to produce environment friendly products to control weeds and insects.

*Giant feed lots and giant slaughter houses will cease. All animals used for food will be free ranging. Slaughter houses will be smaller coops and number at least 1000 and located in every state. Health inspectors will surprise visit every food processing business at least once a month. Video cameras will function in every square foot in each of these businesses. A humane way of killing animals will be performed.

*All factories that create pink slime for hamburger meat will cease to exist.

*At least one locally owned dairy will be near every substantial town (population of 10,000 or more) in the United States.

*Desalinization plants will be constructed along the west coast of the United States and also along the coast of Texas. The combined output must be enough to provide irrigation and drinking water for the arid parts of America during times of drought. Large water lines will crisscross America to divert water from areas of abundance to areas of need. New and innovative water conserving irrigation methods will be employed.

*We need to protect our agricultural land. New residential and commercial development will not be permitted on farm land, wet land, forest land. Residences will only be permitted on a piece of farm land for the family who owns and farms the property. If you own farm land out of the city, you have to work it to provide goods to the populous. If you want to do this there will be training programs and equipment provided to you along with a probationary period to see if you actually do it otherwise you have to move back to the city. Farm and ranching doesn't have to be your main source of employment, but you must produce farm products commensurate with the size and capacity of the land.

*No more bovine hormones or any other hormones will be used on farm animals in the US.

*Millions of acres of prairie land now used to grow corn and wheat will return to grassland and be used to feed cattle, goats, sheep, chickens, ducks and other free ranging animals. Oats and sorghum milo maze and similar crops can also be planted for free ranging animals to forage on.

*The US leases vast amounts of prairie and desert land to ranchers. Some grasslands in the US are so sparse that they can only support one cow per 50 acres or more. The ranchers who lease these lands are also the caretakers. If they themselves pollute or if they allow others to pollute or harm the soil or water or destroy vegetation or wildlife beyond what's legally permissible on these lands they and their families will be severely punished.

*Like leafcutter ants, in every state near every big town we will have underground food growing and storage facilities in case of an above ground catastrophe.

*There is a shortage of grocery stores and other shopping in depressed parts of large cities across America. This shortage will end immediately.

Self-sustainment and jobs

*The US will have at least 100 vehicle manufacturing plants distributed across the country. Included will be small utility vehicles, cars, trucks of all sizes, farm use vehicles, specialty use vehicles, and all types of aircraft and watercraft. Research & development will be encouraged to have fossil fuel free vehicles. Companies that make vehicles with high miles per gallon numbers, or vehicles that incorporate renewable products into their design, or vehicles that have manufacturing processes with zero negative impact to the environment will get special preferences and rewards.

*A national job opportunity register will be on internet. The US will have zero or near zero unemployment.

*A comprehensive annual job performance review will be performed that is unbiased.

*Unless prevented by climate or natural resource availability, all manufacturing and services consumed by Americans will be made and performed in the US by Americans.

*You can't have your cake and eat it, too. If you want to live in the US, you will work for a US company. You cannot receive any income from any sources outside of the US.

*Monetary "for-profit" businesses will no longer exist. Instead businesses will exist to meet consumer needs, both immediate and long term. The following must be done for the long-term: **a.)** constantly search for new and innovative goods and services, **b.)** the environment will not be hurt when making goods, while using goods, and when disposing of goods no longer fit for use, **c.)** search of best type of materials for products. Renewable instead of non-renewable, plentiful instead of scarce, reliable instead of non-reliable, long lasting instead of rapidly deteriorating, fixable instead of disposable.

*Homes and vehicles and other significant items will be modularly designed. For example, if a fender of a car is dented, it will be made to be easily unplugged with a new one snapped into place. House windows can easily be snapped in and out from the inside. Same with toilets and sinks and cabinetry and light fixtures, etc. Diagnostic tools to easily identify auto problems

should be perfected and vehicles constructed to easily have access to items that will break and need replacing.

*No more professional services provided by offshore entities.

*There will no longer be any separate labor unions of any kind in the US. The US is now one labor union of, for, and by the People.

*We could care less if the super-rich leave the US. What we do care about is all necessary manufacturing and services must be returned to the US. All people that attempt to stop this process will be apprehended and taken back to the US and punished. If any citizen wishes to renounce their citizenship and leave the country they are welcome to do so. But all real estate and all personal property owned by them in the US including all money reverts to the People of the US. But if the People through the courts conclude that any ex-patriots intentionally are causing harm to Americans then they will be apprehended and punished here in the US.

*A program will immediately be established to find and utilize and reward extreme talent to meet our top priority needs in forming our new country. A pool or a repository of highly talented and capable people will be maintained for our future needs. Foreigners who could greatly help us with our mission will be invited to become US citizens.

*Private industry and government workers and contractors will have as much as possible a flat hierarchy. They will function in a collaborative community fashion and not a boss/servant relationship.

*The US being a free and open society, all activity and documents in all companies is open to the public. We will now be working together in a collaborative way. Exceptions will be made concerning national security by a super-majority vote of the People.

*People can retire at age 62. No sooner, unless their poor health causes retirement.

*The maximum size a business can be is 1 billion dollars either in net sales or in asset value.

*Handcrafted products will be encouraged and rewarded. For example, the People of the US will give bonuses to those who make "hand made to fit" jeans, or boots, or shoes, or shirts and blouses. This applies to all consumables. In other words it's perfectly ok if a person wants to make anything to sell. Even something like a car or a motorcycle, but they must have all critical parts and processes inspected and approved. And the craftsperson must adhere to all standards mandated by the People for safety and environment.

*Sports franchises are a very important part of the fabric of America. Every major city in America will have a football, basketball, baseball, hockey, and soccer team that is owned and controlled first by the citizens of that city.

*Music is a very important to Americans. A national recording and distribution studio owned and controlled by the People will exist. It will have branches into all genres of music. New talent will constantly be promoted.

Our homes

*The purchase price of a home will be \$25 per square foot or less. The price of all items used in making, improving, or repairing a home will be cut by at least 75%. Easily renewable materials for homes will be used before marginally non-renewable. Like cement block before wood. Our forests in the US will be managed by the People, and wood will be made available only under the management program when tree clearing is utilized to make the forest land more sustainable.

*Ghettos are no longer allowed in America.

*As much as possible, all residences at all economic levels will be interspersed among one another. No more exclusive very expensive highbrow private country club gated communities are allowed in the US. The extreme separation of classes of citizens is now ended.

*No apartments will exist anymore. They will become condominiums. HMOs can be formed, but can never be harmful to a homeowner, especially a veteran. The owner of a home can rent out some of the space in their home to up to three people. This is because some people want to live on as small a "footprint" as possible without the responsibilities of home care and maintenance. Bed and breakfasts and hotels will continue for tourists. And many large homes may now be turned into B&Bs.

Education

*High schools will have mandatory courses each year in the construction crafts like HVAC, electrical, plumbing, refrigeration, roofing, flooring, foundation, walls, rough in, finish out, safety, concrete, stucco, making counters and furniture.

*Schools from kinder through 12th grade will have required courses on maintaining and protecting our healthy environment both indoors and outdoors.

*All education of any and all kind in the US will be free. But anybody who cannot maintain at least a C+ average in college must quit and go to work. Students must have everything possible at their disposal to enable them to make good grades.

*It's crucial our children in school will be taught about living a good happy life. All schools will teach courses on altruism, and caring for one another, ethics, and food using edible education. The next vid is an hour and sixteen minutes and completely unnecessary to view for this book. But if you have some extra time and are interested, here it is. And talking about food, shouldn't we bring it as well as many other segments of real life into the classroom to bring the classroom to life? By the time students leave high school, shouldn't they know how to prepare at least ten dishes from scratch? Knowing how to grow and prepare food can aid in our survival and enjoyment of life.

*It's been shown by scientists that our cognition processes are extremely enhanced and illuminated when language is introduced to our minds. Words give us a much greater understanding of the world around us. Words codify what we come to know. Words like caring, truth, happiness, bravery, joyfulness, energy, love, and the tickling inside when you hug someone. This gives a young child the needed stimulus in their mind. Can you imagine how much better our kids will be if they [knew three](#) languages each with their own separate nuances and idioms? Our school system is so prejudiced and myopic that we only teach our young children one language. If you know many languages, you're a polyglot. Two languages, you're bilingual. Only one language then congratulations, you're an American. We have really robbed our small children by not exposing them to other languages. This [vid](#) was interesting because she said they can work out problems quicker and easier in Chinese. Is it only because it's their birth language or also because of the character of the language itself? The Chinese typically have higher IQs than Americans. Does their language have anything to do with it? I would make it mandatory for all children from age 0 to age 5 be taught at least three other languages. Ones with completely different roots will be preferable like Spanish, Russian, and Chinese.

*The education system in the US will be completely revamped and continually improved. Recommendations will be received from all interested persons in the US. All input will be analyzed, correlated, and prioritized according to demand. The results will be available for the citizens to see and vote on. Then further analysis will be performed. Using these results the People will contract groups of capable people to assemble workable plans for educating our youth. These plans will be presented to the public and voted on. The formulation process will occur as many times as necessary until the People approve a final plan with a super-majority vote. I will humbly recommend not having a "cookie cutter" or a "standardized" approach to educating our children. Every child has different talents and desires. To put it another way all of our children have many different wonderful things that they are capable of contributing to humankind. Spend a small amount of the day teaching them basic reading, writing, math, art/music, languages, social caring, and science. Then help each kid identify the things they love to do and encourage them to pursue those things. Give them the tools. Giving them the tools is more important than anything else. Let them go unfettered as high as they want. In my mind I always seem to come back to people like [Emily Bear](#). (*watch at least a few minutes of [this vid](#)*) Emily is an example of turning kids loose, giving them the tools and tons of encouragement, then letting them fly free to the far reaches of their imagination, feelings, and ability. Not all kids can be [music superstars](#) like Emily, but they are all superstars in their own way. With endless, boundless energy they just need to find it in their heart. But if some kids do want to play music, then go all out and give them the best instruments, and as much instruction as they want, and tons of energetic support, and watch [them](#) fly! It'll be [unbelievable](#)! Rigid forms of education, including standardization just smothers all of this. Visualize for a moment all the many countless wonderful things that we humans have and do in our society today, then multiply the wonders and advancements a thousand times. I'm advocating the type of education that will allow this to happen.

*Most of you have purposefully been kept ignorant about this: The current fad today is called "Common Core Curriculum". This is a method to dumb down kids, kill innovation, and to remove parents' voices in educating their children. It must stop now. This cookie cutter approach is completely the wrong way to go. We're not eggs in a carton spit out by an egg

laying factory. Small, medium, large, caged, free ranging, all labeled and identified. We're supposed teach our kids to be free divergent [thinkers](#) and not little voice recorders meant to recite and believe all that society has taught us to parrot. Don't you agree? Then let's put it into our amendment.

[Property](#)

*The maximum real estate one person can own is three square miles. One section must be in diversified agriculture while the other two sections can be in pasture. Maximum real estate owned by one person in populated areas like cities is two acres. An exception is if the land is in agricultural production.

*The maximum net worth a person can have is 50 million dollars.

*The maximum yearly income per person is 1 million dollars.

*Property can be passed down to younger generations, but it's still subject to maximum levels of real estate and net worth ownership.

*Exceptions to exceed the limits above can be given by a super majority popular vote by the People of the US.

*The maximum number of homes a person may own is three.

*All real estate and items representing the net worth in excess of the limits will be placed in a repository owned by and for the benefit of the People. Laws will later be made to be passed by a super majority vote to determine the use and disposition of such property. One such law will be to sell at a very reasonable price 400 acre farms to people, especially city folk who want to get into farming, or several sections of pastureland for a family that would like to raise cattle. A small farmer will not have to share his/her ownership in their land with his/her workers.

*No foreign owners of anything in America. Not land, shares of ownership in businesses, commercial buildings, homes, personal property... nothing. All foreigners will give up everything and the property will also be held in the Peoples repository for future disposition. This mandate is extremely important when you consider that foreigners today have large ownership interests in our largest defense contractors like Lockheed Martin. The largest shareholder is State Street Corporation in Boston with Jay Hooley as CEO. State Street is what I will call a worldwide investment club for the super-rich. They have over 27.43 trillion dollars of assets under custody and administration. The GNP of the US today is around \$17 trillion. To give you a better perspective... all the homes in America have a total [value](#) of 27 trillion dollars. Amazing, isn't it? The fact that \$27.43 trillion is under their custody is by itself enough to show we have a runaway rich class that must be ended and there are foreigners that own a significant amount of America. The power must be returned back to the People of the United States. Foreign ownership of our defense contractors and everything else must end. Now!

*No more auto and home insurance because the People will reimburse for losses. If after an investigation it is found the owner intentionally destroyed the property, then they go to jail for 30 days with taser treatments 8 times a day.

Power

*All utilities provided in the US will be free to the People. All utility, telephone and cell phone companies are now owned and controlled by the People, and it's all free.

*Photovoltaic systems will be on every building where practicable. Wind energy production will be at every building site where practicable. Except for nuclear power, other forms of non-fossil or renewable energy production will be encouraged. We will mass produce photovoltaic systems and wind electricity generating systems then install them all over our country to reduce dependence on fossil fuels and greatly reduce air pollution.

*All computer chips will be housed in a medium to protect them from electromagnetic pulses.

Transportation

*A complex system of publically owned rail transportation will be constructed in and between all major cities of the US. The rail system will be powered by PV systems.

*All roads and bridges will be publically owned and maintained in top condition.

Environment

*The environmental protection agency will operate for the sole and exclusive purpose of protecting and preserving the environment from all forms of contamination including nuclear, air, ground, and water. Programs will be put into effect to protect all wildlife. We will have a project to increase the number of national parks in the US by 10 fold. Special effort will be placed in those states that are underrepresented with parks. Some parcels of land in the repository will be taken out and turned into national wildlife preserves and national parks for people to visit and enjoy. The ratio of these parks and preserves spread evenly across the US will be no less than 25% of the US land mass. The environmental protection agency will work to protect the air, ground, and water as well as all wildlife. It must not be used as a tool to hamper or curtail the People's enjoyment of our country. We will have many more parks and wilderness areas, but the People must have the right to go there and experience it. In the western part of the US, ranchers may continue to graze their cattle on public property in appropriate numbers as long as they are excellent stewards of the land and protect it from any harm. All factories and plants that dump pollution into the atmosphere and into the water and onto the soil will be required to immediately install devices to completely remove the pollution before it leaves the factory. The captured pollution must be made harmless instead of dumped. If that is impossible then the things that cause pollution must be taken out of the manufacturing process.

*Non-renewable or near non-renewable resources will be held in trust by the People. An example is forest land, land with needed mineral deposits, all oil and natural gas reserves, and land with coal. The People will decide how much to extract in any given year and where and to whom it is to be sold.

*When a person buys something new, they cannot just walk away and abandon the thing they replaced it with. Homes and other real estate cannot be abandoned. Personal assets such as cars cannot be dumped or abandoned off of the owner's property. If an owner doesn't want their home or car or other assets anymore, they have the responsibility to sell it, give it away, or dispose of it properly according to current law.

The media

*All TV and radio stations are owned and controlled by the People. No more profit motivation. Now its people motivation.

*Advertising will continue. It must be entertaining and not vulgar. Advertising must never be false. The amount of ad time in the media will be restricted to ten minutes per hour. And, the People will decide who and what types of advertising will be placed in the media.

*Freedom of speech will continue to be guaranteed , especially on the airwaves and on the internet. The People will allow the broadest spectrum of opinions possible. Islam is the exception because it puts authority of the Imams and Mullahs over the power of the People.

*The US media will undergo a complete overhaul. During a substantial amount of time during each day, local television and radio stations across the US will write their own scripts and be controlled by the people in their own localities. The national news advisory employees will be a cross section of all people across the US. The advisory group will number in the several thousand. This group will be the overseers of what we see on the news and will report monthly to all the People of the US.

*All "Public Relations" firms like Gibraltar Associates, LLC are now out of business. The intent of these businesses is to manipulate the minds of the American public into believing what the client wants them to believe, even if it's a lie. Along with other PR firms, Gibraltar for years has been an appendage of the Federal Government. Their job has been to deceive you into believing what our government is doing is right.

Entertainment programs will be broad spectrum. Not just comedies with extreme sexual innuendos and cop shows with actors taking people down and firing guns all the time. Entertainment will offer something for everyone. For example, Chicken Soup for the Soul will be brought back to TV. TV and radio will not have to depend on advertising dollars to survive.

Healthcare

*Total number of physicians in the US will be at least 4% of the total population, or one doctor for every 25 people. It's mandated that enough medical schools will be in operation to achieve this. Total general practitioners will be at least 2 ½ % of the population. The deadline for enough medical schools in operation is three years. Qualifications for entrance to med school will be prioritized. First is the desire to help and heal people or compassion, second is grades, third is team work abilities or the ability to get along well with people. The grade point average, and compassion and social skill grades will be on every diploma and copies must be prominently displayed in the waiting rooms. We must have at least 10% of the population as nurses. The

number of nursing schools will increase to make that happen within five years. They will have to practice as a nurse for at least a year and must maintain their license for life.

*All medical research will be done as one in the US. Every researcher will have access and information sharing with all other medical researchers. An intensive unified coordinated effort will be initiated to cure cancer in all its forms. The People will provide whatever is necessary in resources to achieve this goal.

*No more medical insurance in the US because all medical care is free.

*I grew up in a dense Hispanic culture that was very family oriented. Like if a child went to the doctor, the whole family including aunts and uncles went, too. You have to live it to understand how wonderful this is. In the spirit of this, I recommend all shopping malls and other places where people gather be designed to promote family and friends and the community experience. An example is [Plaza Fiesta](#) in Atlanta. It appeals to the Hispanic family culture. But no matter what their ethnicity is, people want a mall to be a gathering place to have fun. Shopping should just be ancillary. [San Antonio](#), with our multi-ethnic culture has fiestas and festivals that promote joyful human experiences. The amusement parks, the parades, the street festivals, the music, the dancing, the ethnic foods, the beer, fun rides for kids, the families coming together as one community out to have lots of fun. This is what I want to see all over America. I recommend if you want the People to have a good happy healthy attitude then we should use cities like San Antonio, Austin, Miami, San Diego, and Las Vegas as models for fun and entertainment then spread it all over our country. [Healthy living](#) is about good experiences and community. It's not about slaving away to make a few people rich.

*It seems a majority of terrorist killings carried out by Americans have been because the assailants were on a cocktail of prescription drugs. Ivan Lopez at Fort Hood and Adam Lanza at Sandy Hook elementary are examples. More research into psychotropic drugs must be carried out. Only safe drugs will be allowed to be sold to the public. Profit motivation has long been a problem here, but that's ended now. Then there are people like Elliot Rodger who was clearly mentally ill with his parents asking for him to be admitted into a psychiatric institution, but doctors wouldn't do it. Medical professionals genuinely need to have the tools and ability to determine if a person is a menace to society, and they must not be negligent. Today, front line psychological appraisals are being made by our double digit IQ policemen when answering disturbance calls. That must end. Either the policeman will have adequate medical education or they will bring along a medical professional on all calls requiring medical and mental evaluations.

[Foreign trade](#)

*We will develop trade relationships with others outside the US. No money will be used in transacting business. Instead products will be traded. For instance the US cannot grow bananas and coffee very well. So we will import them from countries in the tropics. Instead of paying for them in US dollars, we will trade goods we produce in America for what they produce. And when we buy things like coffee we will ensure the workers are paid a living wage and there is no pollution including insecticides and herbicides used on the coffee trees, etc. In other words after

the Big Change, US dollars can only be used in the US. Trading between the US and other countries will continue, but it will be in the exchange of commodities.

Foreign relations

*Through our technology we will make direct contact with citizens in all countries. Using our internet grid and advanced language translation engines we will be able to talk person to person, or the People of the US as one, speaking to foreign individuals or to them collectively. This will open a direct dialogue with the people of other countries, bypassing their rulers with their potential internet censorship. An example will be an email and text and tweet simultaneously sent to all the Russian and Chinese people simply saying "We American citizens will like to say hello to all Russian and Chinese citizens. If you will like to get to know us better, just send us some questions. Our programs will take all your questions and answer them. Here is also a list of tens of thousands of people from all areas of the US and all walks of life. If you will like to directly send them an email with a question or have anything to say on Skype, please feel free to do so. We want you to get to know us on a first hand basis. We will like this to be the start of a direct open line of communication between each other. You can also use Facebook without limitation. We may live on the other side of the world but we hope this ability to communicate will bring us much closer together. Thanks."

*All treaties will be done completely in the open by the People of the US and by the People of other countries.

*All contracts existing between anybody or any business in America and anybody or any business outside America will immediately undergo review by a revolving panel of 1000 citizens who are given guidelines to follow. The contracts may be terminated, amended, or enhanced.

*We will open a dialog with the people in the countries where we have military bases. In the dialog we will make sure the people want us there. If they don't, we immediately leave. The countries where we have military bases will pay us to be there, otherwise we will leave. But first we, the People, must decide whether we want to be there or not.

Our legislative process

*A detailed system of initiating and formalizing and voting for legislation will be created.

The "Native American" and "Liberating Mexico and Guatemala" are very personal wants of mine. You may think differently. But I just want to throw it out there:

Native Americans

*All American Indian tribes will be given full control of their reservation land. They are full citizens of the US and will have all the rights and privileges of a citizen. And they need to conform to all US laws. The quality of life on all reservations must be good. The People of the US respect all American indigenous peoples and as such will make every effort to improve their lives in whatever way possible without hurting or diminishing their culture or curtailing their freedoms.

*The Native American Alaskan peoples will be given substantial amounts of land as reservation property.

*The indigenous people of Hawaii must receive recompense for having their land stolen from them. All Hawaiian people who are at least 1/4 Hawaiian will have all of Hawaii given back to them. They will have an equal share of ownership. Those living in Hawaii who are not part of owners will be allowed to continue to live there but they must pay a reasonable rental fee to the owners for that right. Research the theft on YouTube or start with [Wiki](#). Those few wicked Americans in the 1800s should not have done this, and our country should not have sponsored the takeover. It was a crime and we, the People, need to fix it.

[Liberating Mexico and Guatemala](#)

*For decades we have had Mexican citizens enter and illegally live in the US. This has cost the US uncountable sums of money. Mexico will pay us in oil one trillion dollars in reparations for having such a repressive society that people had to leave their motherland in order to survive. Many second and third generation Mexican/Americans will like to free Mexico. Since we are so closely connected to Mexico, the country must now change its form of government to be similar to the new People's government of the US. A team of about 500,000 American professionals fluent in Spanish will move to Mexico to see it comes about. 500,000 American soldiers fluent in Spanish will also move to Mexico to ensure stability during the transition. The country of Mexico will now belong to its people instead of a few super wealthy. Mexico will pay us for our efforts, but it will be money well spent.

*Guatemala is directly below Mexico. Over several decades the US government was responsible for the repression of its people and more than 200,000 deaths of [Guatemalan](#) citizens just to keep the American owned United Fruit Company (Chiquita Bananas) in business. The US will do the same with Guatemala as it's doing with Mexico as a way to make up for the past wrongs. A few rich are still dominating the masses in these Central American countries. It must stop. A friend I had in El Paso named Pilar Charo ran a giant jean manufacturing plant in Guatemala for a million dollar a year salary. It's a barbed wire compound where the people are treated like slaves and paid nothing. Americans like Pilar use and abuse then retire and return home to live a good life while the locals continue to suffer.

[Computer infrastructure](#)

*The US will have an excellent data collection and data analysis system in order for us to function to determine our needs and then be able to meet them with minimal rationing.

*Our electronic data collection, retrieval, and analytical systems must be audited constantly for malfeasance and corruption.

[The Peoples Monument and Museum](#)

*The People of the United States of America commission the building of a memorial museum and amusement park to be located in the Washington, DC area. It will be named "The Peoples Monument and Museum." It is to commemorate and celebrate the greatest event in American history. And as such it must be built on a grand scale.

[Conclusion](#)

I'm sure there are many more things you will like to have in our Amendment. Write them down. Form local groups to advocate for a direct democracy. Have the movement rise to a national level. Then do it. Simply do it.